

---

**Rural Sustainable Development Policies in the Kurdistan  
Region of Iraq and their Impact on Migration**

**The Case of Erbil Governorate**

BY

HEMN A. MAWLOOD NANAKALI

March 29, 2021

TU-DORTMUND

FACULTY OF SPATIAL PLANNING

---

Rural Sustainable Development Policies in the Kurdistan Region of Iraq and their  
Impact on Migration

The Case of Erbil

By

Nanakali, Hemn Abdulkareem Mawlood

A thesis submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of a  
Doctor rerum politicarum awarded by the Faculty of Spatial Planning, TU-  
Dortmund

Dissertation Committee:

Chair of the dissertation committee Prof. Dr. phil. habil Karsten Zimmermann

Univ.-Prof. Dr. Einhard Schmidt-Kallert

Univ.-Prof. Dr.-Ing. Dietwald Gruehn

This dissertation was successfully defended on March 29, 2021, at the Faculty of Spatial  
Planning, Technical University of Dortmund, Germany

March 29, 2021

Dortmund, Germany

---

## **Declaration**

I hereby declare that this doctoral dissertation is the result of an independent investigation. Where it is indebted to the work of others, acknowledgements have duly been made.

Hemn Nanakali  
Dortmund, March 2021

---

## **Dedication**

This piece of work is dedicated to all villagers in the rural areas in the Kurdistan Region

---

## Acknowledgement

First and foremost, praises and thanks to God, the Almighty, for his showers of blessings throughout my research and work conducted to successfully complete this research.

I would like to express my deep and sincere gratitude to my research supervisors, Professor Dr. Einhard Schmidt-Kallert, Professor Dr. Dietwald Gruehn and Prof. Dr. phil. habil Karsten Zimmermann for their guidance and patience along the process, and special thanks go to the Faculty of the Spatial Planning of the TU-Dortmund.

I am extremely grateful to my parents for their love, prayers, caring and sacrifices for educating and preparing me for my future. I am very thankful to my wife Treefa and my children Dana, Twana and Rosana for their love, understanding, prayers and continuing support to complete this research work. Also I express my thanks to my sisters and brother for their support and valuable prayers. My special thanks go to my friends and colleagues for their keen interest shown to support the successful completion of this thesis.

## Abstract

Rural migration in Kurdistan Region has occurred in two different patterns as a result of two different policies. The first pattern was a forced migration by a policy of the Iraqi government. This policy resulted in total demolition and evacuation of 4000 villages and lasted between five to 17 years, depending on the area. In contrast, the second migration was a consequence of push and pull factors. After the approval of the new investment law by the Kurdistan Region Government in 2006, this region was quickly developed and several sectors were significantly improved, such as the oil and construction sectors which pulled labour force everywhere to different sectors. However, the agricultural sector was not that much in the focus of the government and investors as compared like the other sectors. Hence, this development caused significant rural to urban migration and had severe adverse impacts, even ruin, for agricultural projects.

This study describes the size of the demolition, and additionally investigates the most effective factor for migration after 1991. On the other hand, the study also explains how the government dealt with this phenomenon. The study employed a mixed-methods research design involving archival methods for the extent of the demolition. Furthermore, questionnaires were administered to 330 migrants and non-migrants (165 migrants in Mergasur and 165 non-migrants in Bahrka) to test the conceptual framework and the hypotheses. This was followed by an in-depth interview with 20 villagers and farmers to explore the push and pull factors in both origin and destination places. The last step in the research process were the expert interviews. These interviews were conducted with six persons at different levels from top management to low managerial level.

The analysis revealed that the general effects of migrations in the rural areas were mixed. While migrations have had negative or positive impacts for some, they have also impacted on work culture, family size, lifestyle and education level. There were various factors such as physical security, income and other factors related to income that were the main factors impacting on migration after 1991. The factor of income was more deeply defined in this study as a “secured satisfied income”, which is addressed at a minimum by the Critical income level (CIL). The study concluded that the CIL is \$137 and can be reached via proper policies in a proper conceptual framework.

## Table of Contents

|  |           |
|--|-----------|
| DECLARATION -----  | 1         |
| DEDICATION -----   | 2         |
| ACKNOWLEDGEMENT -----  | 3         |
| ABSTRACT 4   |           |
| TABLE OF CONTENTS -----  | 5         |
| ABBREVIATIONS -----  | 11        |
| <b>1.1 MOTIVATION</b> -----  | <b>13</b> |
| <b>1.2 PROBLEM STATEMENT</b> -----                                       | <b>14</b> |
| <b>1.3 RESEARCH QUESTIONS</b> -----                                      | <b>15</b> |
| <b>1.4 PROPOSITION AND HYPOTHESIS</b> -----                              | <b>16</b> |
| <b>1.5 SIGNIFICANCE OF THE STUDY</b> -----                               | <b>16</b> |
| <b>2.1 ENTRANCE TO MIGRATION</b> -----                                   | <b>17</b> |
| 2.1.1 TYPES OF MIGRATION -----   | 18        |
| 2.1.2 THEORETICAL OVERVIEW OF MIGRATION-----                             | 22        |
| <b>2.2 MIGRATION AND DECISION-MAKING</b> -----                           | <b>30</b> |
| <b>2.3 RURAL MIGRATION</b> -----   | <b>31</b> |
| 2.3.1 RURAL AND URBAN -----  | 31        |
| 2.3.2 INTERCONNECTION OF RURAL AND URBAN AREAS-----                      | 32        |
| 2.3.3 HISTORY, TYPES, AND CHALLENGES OF RURAL MIGRATION -----            | 33        |
| <b>2.4 CONCLUSION</b> -----  | <b>34</b> |
| <b>2.5 MIGRATIONS IN THE KR</b> -----                                    | <b>38</b> |
| 2.5.1 THE OTTOMAN ERA 1532-1917 -----                                    | 38        |
| 2.5.2 THE KINGDOM’S ERA OF IRAQ 1918-1957-----                           | 39        |
| 2.5.3 REPUBLIC ERA (ABDULKAREEM QASIM’S ERA) 1958 – 1963 -----           | 39        |
| 2.5.4 THE ERA OF THE BA’ATH PARTY 1963-1990 -----                        | 40        |
| 2.5.5 THE FIRST GENOCIDE -----   | 41        |
| 2.5.6 THE KURDISTAN REGION AFTER THE SADDAM HUSSEIN’S ERA 1991-2014----- | 46        |
| <b>2.6 CONCLUSION</b> -----  | <b>46</b> |
| <b>3.1 ENTRANCE TO PUBLIC POLICY AND POLICY-MAKING</b> -----             | <b>51</b> |
| <b>3.2 POLICY-MAKING APPROACHES</b> -----                                | <b>57</b> |
| 3.2.1 TOP-DOWN APPROACH -----  | 57        |
| 3.2.2 BOTTOM-UP APPROACH -----   | 57        |
| 3.2.3 MESO-LEVEL APPROACH -----  | 58        |

|             |  |            |
|-------------|--|------------|
| <b>3.3</b>  | <b>RURAL GOVERNANCE AND RURAL SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT</b>  | <b>59</b>  |
| 3.3.1       | GOVERNANCE AND GOOD GOVERNANCE                             | 59         |
| 3.3.2       | RURAL SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT PROGRAM AND CONCEPT          | 60         |
| <b>3.4</b>  | <b>AGRICULTURAL SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT IN RURAL AREAS</b> | <b>62</b>  |
| <b>3.5</b>  | <b>TOURISM AND SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT IN RURAL AREAS</b>  | <b>64</b>  |
| <b>3.6</b>  | <b>MARKETPLACE AND ITS PERFECTION</b>                      | <b>66</b>  |
| 3.6.1       | MARKET AND MARKETING                                       | 66         |
| 3.6.2       | SUPPLY AND DEMAND IN THE MARKETS                           | 69         |
| <b>3.7</b>  | <b>COMBINATION OF CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORKS</b>                | <b>70</b>  |
| 3.7.1       | THE SOCIAL CAPITAL BY CASTEL                               | 70         |
| 3.7.2       | OVERVIEW OF SUSTAINABLE LIVELIHOODS DEVELOPMENT            | 71         |
| <b>3.8</b>  | <b>INCOME POLICY</b>                                       | <b>77</b>  |
| <b>3.9</b>  | <b>RURAL DEVELOPMENT POLICIES IN THE KR OF IRAQ</b>        | <b>80</b>  |
| 3.9.1       | POLICIES OF THE SECOND PERIOD                              | 80         |
| 3.9.2       | POLICIES OF THE THIRD PERIOD                               | 83         |
| <b>3.10</b> | <b>CONCLUSION</b>  | <b>84</b>  |
| <b>4.1</b>  | <b>THEORETICAL PERSPECTIVE AND APPROACHES</b>              | <b>87</b>  |
| <b>4.2</b>  | <b>POSITIONALITY</b>                                       | <b>90</b>  |
| <b>4.3</b>  | <b>RESEARCH DESIGN AND BOUNDARIES</b>                      | <b>91</b>  |
| 4.3.1       | RESEARCH SEQUENTIAL  | 91         |
| 4.3.2       | RESEARCH BOUNDARIES  | 93         |
| 4.3.3       | RESEARCH PROCESS   | 94         |
| <b>4.4</b>  | <b>STUDY SITE AND JUSTIFICATIONS</b>                       | <b>95</b>  |
| <b>4.5</b>  | <b>UNIT SELECTION FROM THE GOVERNORATES</b>                | <b>98</b>  |
| 4.5.1       | MERGASUR (PLACE OF ORIGIN)                                 | 100        |
| 4.5.2       | BAHRKA   | 108        |
| <b>4.6</b>  | <b>SAMPLING AND SAMPLE</b>                                 | <b>108</b> |
| <b>4.7</b>  | <b>DATA COLLECTION APPROACH</b>                            | <b>111</b> |
| 4.7.1       | QUANTITATIVE ARCHIVAL                                      | 111        |
| 4.7.2       | QUANTITATIVE QUESTIONNAIRES                                | 112        |
| 4.7.3       | QUALITATIVE INTERVIEWEE                                    | 113        |
| 4.7.4       | CODING OF THE QUALITATIVE DATA                             | 114        |
| 4.7.5       | TYPES OF CODING  | 114        |
| <b>4.8</b>  | <b>DATA MANAGEMENT AND ANALYSIS</b>                        | <b>115</b> |
| 4.8.1       | MANAGEMENT OF QUANTITATIVE DATA                            | 115        |



|                            |   |                   |
|----------------------------|---|-------------------|
| 4.8.2                      | MANAGEMENT OF QUALITATIVE DATA  | 116               |
| <b>5.1</b>                 | <b>THE IMPACTS OF DEMOLITIONS FROM THE ANFAL OPERATIONS</b>                           | <b>117</b>        |
| 5.1.1                      | IMPACTS IN MERGASUR   | 117               |
| 5.1.2                      | IMPACTS IN BAHRKA   | 120               |
| <b>5.2</b>                 | <b>CAUSES FOR MIGRATION IN THE RURAL AREA OF MERGASUR</b>                             | <b>121</b>        |
| 5.2.1                      | QUANTITATIVE FINDINGS IN MERGASUR   | 121               |
| 5.2.2                      | QUANTITATIVE FINDINGS IN BAHRKA   | 123               |
| <b>5.3</b>                 | <b>CONCLUSION</b>   | <b>125</b>        |
| 5.3.1                      | WORK CULTURE  | 125               |
| 5.3.2                      | FAMILY SIZE   | 126               |
| 5.3.3                      | EDUCATION LEVEL   | 126               |
| 5.3.4                      | INCOME AND MIGRATION  | 126               |
| <b>5.4</b>                 | <b>QUALITATIVE INTERVIEW</b>  | <b>126</b>        |
| 5.4.1                      | CATEGORIZING OF PULL AND PUSH FACTORS IN MERGASUR                                     | 129               |
| 5.4.2                      | COMBINATION OF PUSH AND PULL FACTORS IN MARGASUR                                      | 133               |
| 5.4.3                      | INCOME AND MIGRATION IN MERGASUR  | 134               |
| 5.4.4                      | VILLAGER'S SATISFACTION AND RURAL POLICIES IN MERGASUR                                | 136               |
| 5.4.5                      | CATEGORIZING PULL AND PULL FACTORS IN BAHRKA  | 137               |
| 5.4.6                      | COMBINATION OF PUSH AND PULL FACTORS IN BAHRKA  | 141               |
| 5.4.7                      | INCOME AND MIGRATION IN BAHRKA  | 142               |
| 5.4.8                      | VILLAGER'S SATISFACTION AND RURAL POLICIES IN BAHRKA                                  | 143               |
| <b>5.5</b>                 | <b>POLICY FORMULATION, FOLLOWING-UP AND EVALUATION (QUALITATIVE EXPERT INTERVIEW)</b> | <b>144</b>        |
| <b>5.6</b>                 | <b>CONCLUSION</b>   | <b>147</b>        |
| <b>6.1</b>                 | <b>CONCLUSION</b>   | <b>150</b>        |
| <b>6.2</b>                 | <b>RECOMMENDATIONS</b>  | <b>155</b>        |
| 6.2.1                      | ACTION PLANS FOR ENHANCING THE FARMS AND ACHIEVE THE CIL                              | 160               |
| 6.2.2                      | GENERALIZATION OF THE SUCCESS OF THE PILOT PROJECT                                    | 161               |
| 6.2.3                      | RETIREMENT LAW FOR THE FARMERS  | 161               |
| <b><u>BIBLIOGRAPHY</u></b> |   | <b><u>207</u></b> |

|   |    |
|---|----|
| FIGURE 1-MASLOW'S HIERARCHY OF NEEDS (ADAPTED FROM GOBLE, THE THIRD FORCE)      | 24 |
| FIGURE 2- ORIGIN AND DESTINATION FACTORS AND INTERVENING OBSTACLES IN MIGRATION | 24 |
| FIGURE 3-THE BALANCE OF MIGRATION (BOM)   | 25 |
| FIGURE 4- GENERAL FRAMEWORK OF MIGRATION DECISION MAKING                        | 31 |

|  |            |
|--|------------|
| FIGURE 5-ARRANGEMENT OF MIGRATION TYPES .....  | 36         |
| <i>FIGURE 6- THE IRAQI ARMY KILLED THE AGES 16 AND ABOVE 60 IN THIS CAMPAIGN .....</i>                                 | <i>41</i>  |
| FIGURE 7- ARABIZED ZONES OF KR BEFORE 2014 .....   | 42         |
| FIGURE 8- THE DESTROYED AREAS IN THE KR IN THE ANFAL OPERATIONS.....   | 44         |
| FIGURE 9- THE VICTIMS BY AGES, WHO HAVE BEEN KILLED, IN THE ANFAL OPERATIONS.....                                      | 45         |
| FIGURE 10-THE DAMAGED PLACES FROM ANFAL AND THE CHEMICAL ATTACKS PER LOCATION.....                                     | 45         |
| FIGURE 11- RURAL POPULATION DIFFERENCE IN ERBIL.....   | 47         |
| FIGURE 12- ALLOCATION OF THE ERBIL GOVERNORATE BUDGET FROM 2004 TO 2012 .....  | 49         |
| FIGURE 13- LEVELS OF POLICY-MAKING, PLANNING, AND MANAGEMENT .....   | 51         |
| FIGURE 14-THE ROLE OF MONITORING POLICY IMPACTS (MPI) IN THE PROCESS OF POLICY FORMULATION AND<br>IMPLEMENTATION ..... | 52         |
| FIGURE 15- PARTICIPATION OF MAIN PARTIES IN SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT PROGRAMS .....                                     | 54         |
| FIGURE 16-AGRICULTURE SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT CONCEPTS.....  | 63         |
| FIGURE 17-PRODUCTION AND PRICE OF MAIZE IN AFRICA.....   | 70         |
| FIGURE 18-SOCIAL CAPITAL IN A NATION STATE: MICRO TO MACRO CONDITIONS .....  | 71         |
| FIGURE 19-LIVELIHOOD SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT STRUCTURE .....   | 73         |
| FIGURE 20-TURNING FROM HUMAN RESOURCES TO HUMAN CAPITALS .....   | 74         |
| FIGURE 21-ROLE OF POLICY IN FAIR DISTRIBUTION OF CAPITAL ASSETS .....  | 79         |
| FIGURE 22- SUPPLEMENTAL POLICIES FOR AGRICULTURAL POLICY.....  | 79         |
| FIGURE 23- ZONES OF KR AFTER 2014.....   | 81         |
| FIGURE 24- PYRAMID OF PARTICIPATION (PP).....  | 85         |
| FIGURE 25- THE MAIN AND INTERMEDIATE VARIABLES BETWEEN POLICY AND MIGRATION .....                                      | 85         |
| FIGURE 26- POLICY OF RE-MIGRATION BASED ON INCOME SATISFACTION .....   | 86         |
| FIGURE 27- SEQUENTIAL EXPLANATORY MIXED METHODS DESIGN .....   | 91         |
| FIGURE 28- RESEARCH PROCESS.....   | 95         |
| FIGURE 29-DEMOLISHED VILLAGES BY THE GOVERNORATES .....  | 97         |
| FIGURE 30-MURDER THAT OCCURRED IN THE VILLAGES PER GOVERNORATE .....   | 98         |
| FIGURE 31-ANNUAL RAINFALL IN MERGASUR.....   | 102        |
| FIGURE 32- ANNUAL SNOWFALL IN MERGASUR .....   | 103        |
| FIGURE 33-WHO HEADS THE AGRICULTURAL PROJECT IN MERGASUR .....   | 103        |
| FIGURE 34-RATIO OF WOMEN TO MEN HEADING THE AGRICULTURAL PROJECTS IN PIRAN.....  | 104        |
| FIGURE 35-RATIO OF WOMEN TO MEN HEADING THE AGRICULTURE PROJECTS IN SHERWAN MAZN .....                                 | 104        |
| FIGURE 36-RATIO OF WOMEN TO MEN HEADING THE AGRICULTURE PROJECTS IN GORATU .....                                       | 104        |
| FIGURE 37-RATIO OF WOMEN TO MEN HEADING THE AGRICULTURAL PROJECTS IN MAZNE.....  | 104        |
| FIGURE 38-RATIO OF WOMEN TO MEN HEADING THE AGRICULTURAL PROJECTS IN BARZAN .....                                      | 105        |
| FIGURE 39- THE MIGRATED FAMILIES IN A CERTAIN PERIOD .....   | 105        |
| FIGURE 40- YEAR OF RETURNING FROM IRAN TO THE KR .....   | 106        |
| FIGURE 41- YEARS OF STAYING IN IRAN.....   | 106        |
| <i>FIGURE 42- CLIMATE DIFFERENCE IN MERGASUR AND DIWANYAHH .....</i>   | <i>118</i> |
| <i>FIGURE 43- INCOME IMPACTS MIGRATION IN MERGASUR .....</i>   | <i>121</i> |
| <i>FIGURE 44- INCOME IMPACTS MIGRATION IN BAHRKA .....</i>   | <i>124</i> |
| FIGURE 45- LEVEL OF MANAGEMENT .....   | 145        |
| FIGURE 46- MARKET DUMPING CONSEQUENCE.....   | 152        |
| FIGURE 47- TURNING THE WEAKNESSES TO STRENGTHS TO REACH THE CIL .....  | 159        |
| FIGURE 48- RE-FORMULATION OF THE CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORK .....  | 160        |

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| TABLE 1- RURAL TO URBAN RATIO IN ERBIL .....   | 14  |
| TABLE 2-THE THEORIES OF MIGRATION REGARDING THE LEVELS.....  | 26  |
| TABLE 3- THE THEORIES OF MIGRATION AT MACRO-LEVEL WITH THEIR FACTORS, CAUSES AND GOALS.....                  | 27  |
| TABLE 4-THE THEORIES OF MIGRATION AT MICRO-LEVEL WITH ITS FACTOR, CAUSE AND GOAL .....                       | 28  |
| TABLE 5-THE THEORIES OF MIGRATION AT MESO LEVEL WITH ITS FACTORS, CAUSES AND GOALS.....                      | 29  |
| TABLE 6- DIFFERENCE BEWTEEN RURAL AND URBAN AREAS .....  | 32  |
| TABLE 7- POPULATION OF THE GOVERNORATE OF MOSUL ACCORDING TO ETHNIC CATEGORIES.....                          | 43  |
| TABLE 8-THE POPULATION OF KIRKUK ACCORDING TO THE ETHNICS .....  | 43  |
| TABLE 9-MIGRATIONS IN THE KR .....   | 48  |
| TABLE 10-RURAL TO URBAN RATIO IN THE ERBIL GOVERNORATE .....   | 50  |
| TABLE 11-COMPARISONS OF ORGANIZATIONS IN DIFFERENT SECTORS.....  | 53  |
| TABLE 12-DEVELOPING A LIST OF CONCEPTS .....   | 56  |
| TABLE 13-SHIFT IN PARTICIPATION .....  | 60  |
| TABLE 14-ADVANTAGE AND DISADVANTAGE OF RURAL TOURISM DEVELOPMENT.....  | 66  |
| TABLE 15-THE THREE GOVERNORATES OF THE KR .....  | 81  |
| TABLE 16-THE KRS' GOVERNORATES TOTAL POPULATION .....  | 82  |
| TABLE 17-ADVANTAGES AND DISADVANTAGES OF THE ARCHIVAL METHOD .....   | 92  |
| TABLE 18-CLASSIFICATION OF MIGRATIONS ON THE BASIS OF THEIR EXTREME CONDITION.....                           | 96  |
| TABLE 19-THE PAST EVENTS OF MERGASUR.....  | 101 |
| TABLE 20-PREDICTED TOTAL POPULATION OF MERGASUR FROM 2004-2015 BASED ON MOHAMMED'S CALCULATION<br>.....      | 107 |
| TABLE 21-PREDICTED TOTAL POPULATION OF MERGASUR FROM 2004-2015 BASED ON THE ERBIL GOV. CALCULATION<br>.....  | 107 |
| TABLE 22-PREDICTED TOTAL POPULATION OF MERGASUR FROM 2004-2015 BASED ON THE KRSO.....                        | 107 |
| TABLE 23-PREDICTED TOTAL POPULATION OF MERGASUR FROM 2004-2015 BASED ON THE RESEARCHER'S PRE-<br>SURVEY..... | 108 |
| TABLE 24-PREDICTION OF THE MERGASUR POPULATION IN 2015 .....   | 108 |
| TABLE 25-SAMPLE SIZE IN MERGASUR (FROM THE ORIGIN PLACE).....  | 110 |
| TABLE 26-NUMBER OF THE PERSON IN BAHRKA (FROM THE DESTINATION PLACE).....                                    | 110 |
| TABLE 27- TRANSCRIPTION RULES .....  | 114 |
| TABLE 28- EXTENT OF INCOME IN MERGASUR.....  | 122 |
| TABLE 29- FACTORS IMPACTING ON MIGRATION BASED CORRELATING WITH INCOME IN MERGASUR .....                     | 123 |
| TABLE 30- ONE-WAY ANOVA FACTORS IMPACTING MIGRATION RELATED TO INCOME IN MERGASUR .....                      | 123 |
| TABLE 31-EXTENT OF INCOME IN BAHRKA .....  | 124 |
| TABLE 32- FACTORS IMPACTING MIGRATION CORRELATING WITH INCOME IN BAHRKA .....                                | 125 |
| TABLE 33- ONE-WAY ANOVA FACTORS IMPACTING MIGRATION CORRELATED WITH INCOME IN BAHRKA .....                   | 125 |
| TABLE 34- QUESTIONNAIRE FORM FOR THE VILLAGERS ( SEE APPENDIX-12 , 14) .....                                 | 127 |
| TABLE 35- FORM FOR THE EXPERT INTERVIEW .....  | 128 |
| TABLE 36 PULL FACTORS FOR MIGRATION IN MERGASUR .....  | 130 |
| TABLE 37- SUMMARIZING OF THE PULL FACTORS IN MERGASUR.....   | 131 |
| TABLE 38- PUSH FACTOR FOR MIGRATION IN MERGASUR .....  | 132 |
| TABLE 39- SUMMARIZING OF THE PUSH FACTORS IN MERGASUR.....   | 133 |

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| TABLE 40- SUM OF THE PULL AND PUSH FACTORS FROM TABLE 37 AND 39 (MERGASUR) .....                                  | 134 |
| TABLE 41- POTENTIAL MIGRATION WITH COMBINATION WITH INCOME IN MERGASUR .....                                      | 135 |
| TABLE 42- FAMILY'S INCOME AND AVERAGE MONTHLY INCOME FOR EACH PERSON IN THE FAMILY (MERGASUR) ...                 | 135 |
| TABLE 43- PULL FACTORS FOR MIGRATION IN BAHRKA .....  | 138 |
| TABLE 44- SUMMARIZING OF THE PULL FACTORS IN BAHRKA .....   | 139 |
| TABLE 45- PUSH FACTOR FOR MIGRATION IN BAHRKA .....   | 140 |
| TABLE 46- SUMMARIZING OF THE PUSH FACTORS IN BAHRKA .....   | 141 |
| TABLE 47- SCORE POINTS OF PULL AND PUSH FACTORS FROM TABLE 44 AND 46 (BAHRKA) .....                               | 141 |
| TABLE 48- POTENTIAL MIGRATION WITH COMBINATION WITH INCOME IN BAHRKA .....  | 142 |
| TABLE 49- FAMILY'S INCOME AND AVERAGE MONTHLY INCOME FOR EACH PERSON IN THE FAMILY (BAHRKA) .....                 | 143 |
| TABLE 50- LIST OF PROBLEMS BY THE EXPERT INTERVIEWEES .....   | 146 |
| TABLE 51- SUM OF THE PULL AND PUSH FACTORS FROM MERGASUR & BAHRKA .....   | 148 |
| TABLE 52- AVERAGE CIL BETWEEN MERGASUR & BAHRKA .....   | 151 |
| TABLE 53- SWOT ANALYSIS OF THE VILLAGER'S POINT OF VIEW IN MERGASUR ABOUT MERGASUR .....                          | 152 |
| TABLE 54- SWOT ANALYSIS OF THE VILLAGER'S POINT OF VIEW IN BAHRKA ABOUT MERGASUR .....                            | 153 |
| TABLE 55- SUM OF THE SWOT ANALYSIS OF THE VILLAGER'S POINT OF VIEW IN MERGASUR AND BAHRKA ABOUT<br>MERGASUR ..... | 154 |
| TABLE 56- PRIORITIZING THE STRENGTHS .....  | 156 |
| TABLE 57- REARRANGEMENT OF THE PRIORITIZING OF THE STRENGTHS .....  | 156 |
| TABLE 58- PRIORITIZING THE WEAKNESSES .....   | 157 |
| TABLE 59- REARRANGEMENT OF THE PRIORITIZING OF THE WEAKNESSES .....   | 157 |
| <br>  |     |
| PICTURE 1- THE REMAINS OF THE CORPSES FROM THE ANFAL CAMPAIGN .....   | 44  |
| PICTURE 2- PLACE OF ORIGIN (MERGASUR) AND PLACE OF DESTINATION (BAHRKA) .....                                     | 99  |
| PICTURE 3- THE DISTANCE BETWEEN THE TWO UNITS .....   | 100 |

## Abbreviations

|            |   |
|------------|---|
| EGSD       | Erbil Governorate Statistic Department          |
| DV and IDV | Dependent and Independent variables             |
| CBO        | Community-based Organization                    |
| CIL        | Critical income level                           |
| CSD        | Commission on Sustainable Development           |
| GDP        | Gross domestic product                          |
| IAU        | Inter –Agency Information and analysis Unit     |
| ID         | Iraqi Dinar                                     |
| IFAD       | International Fund for Agricultural Development |
| ISIS       | Islamic State in Iraq and Syria                 |
| JICA       | Japan international Cooperation Agency          |
| KR         | Kurdistan Regional                              |
| KRG        | Kurdistan Regional Government                   |
| LDS        | Livelihood Development sustainable              |
| MBI        | Migration based income                          |
| MoAWR      | Ministry of Agriculture & Water Resources       |
| MoC        | Ministry of Construction                        |
| MoE        | Ministry of Education                           |
| MoEE       | Ministry of Electric & Energy                   |
| MoF        | Ministry of Finance                             |
| MoH        | Ministry of Health                              |
| MoM        | Ministry of Municipality                        |
| MoP        | Ministry of Planning                            |
| MPI        | Monitoring Policy Impacts                       |
| NGOs       | Non-Government Organization                     |
| PCP        | Public-Civil-Privet                             |
| PKK        | Parti Krekarani Kurdistan                       |
| QoL        | Quality of Life                                 |
| RDS        | Rural Development Sustainable                   |
| RLSD       | Rural livelihood sustainable development        |
| RoI        | Return on investment                            |
| SD         | Sustainable Development                         |
| Rur-Ban    | Rural Urban                                     |

|      |   |
|------|---|
| SLA  | Sustainable Livelihoods Approach                |
| SLFT | Sustainable Livelihood Framework for Tourism    |
| TP   | Triangle of the Participation                   |
| UN   | United Nation                                   |
| UNDP | United Nation                                   |
| WCED | World Commission on Environment and Development |

## **CHAPTER ONE: INTRODUCTION**

### **1.1 Motivation**

My motivation for this study started in 2011 after I became a Director of the Planning Department within the General Directorate of Agricultural Research and Extension in the Ministry of Agriculture and Water Resources (MoAWR) of the Kurdistan Regional Government (KRG). This position afforded me opportunities to build a direct contact with villagers similarly with other parties, such as companies, NGOs, and therefore the syndicates<sup>1</sup>. It also inspired me to pay close attention to events concerning rural areas generally and specifically within the Kurdistan Region (KR) of Iraq.

From the daily news, I heard that the rural population was severely declining and that this had become a substantial threat to rural areas in the Kurdistan Region (Qadir, Rudaw.Net, 2015; Zebary, 2013). The villagers were complaining to the government about problems that they were suffering from and that made their lives precarious. A group of them accused the government regarding some basic needs and another group was requesting better work opportunities. In addition, those who were engaged in farming claimed that they could not sell their products at a decent value, and instead of obtaining a profit they were losing money. As a general trend, a large number of people were inclined to move out of these areas. Nonetheless, the government stated that the issue had been resolved and there was a tendency towards positive advancement and improvement. In 2009, the Ministry of Agriculture and Water Resources (MoAWR) prepared and implemented a five-year strategic plan and started annually spending an enormous amount of budget to develop the rural areas by subsidizing rural projects to stimulate rural life and rural enterprises (MoP, 2011, S. 61). There was a clear focus and there was hope of positive outcomes from this strategic plan. However, the actual outcome was far from this expectation, and this plan failed to adequately target and meet the satisfaction of the villagers.

I did not stop taking note of this news. I attempted to familiarise myself with this issue, and I had some personal meetings with a number of people. During my private discussions with some of the directors in the MoAWR and a number of villagers, I understood that the different sides were not coming together and there were extraordinary gaps. The strategic plan did not solve the core problems of the villagers. The plan had not even clearly identified the extent of the essential needs which needed to be solved. These points prompted me to go deeper into these issues and to

---

<sup>1</sup> In the KR, there are several syndicates and one of them is for the farmers, although this institution is very weak.

discover some solutions through scientific research.

## 1.2 Problem Statement

The data on migration in the rural areas of the Kurdistan Region is scanty. However, there are clear indications that the flow of the villagers was unstable from year to year (see Tab-1). This phenomenon has not been controlled, neither before the implementation of the five years strategic plan by the MoAWR nor after. Nonetheless, every year a large budget has been prepared and been spent through the government ministries to develop the rural areas. None of these efforts could achieve the villagers' satisfaction. The farmers and villagers both blamed the government performance about rural issues. The farmers' claims were about their project outcomes and their losses instead of gaining profit, because the market remained to be flooded by the products from neighbouring countries. This case even reached international news. In 2016, a report was presented by the Aljazeera News, which mentioned that the KR agricultural product markets imported 95% from Turkey and Iran (Aljazeera, 2016). Additionally, producers are facing market surplus every year at the harvest season (Hussen, 2018). Nonetheless, the former destructions of the entire infrastructure of the villages have continued to have a negative impact on the people's lives until today. The farmers and non-farmers are still blaming the government in the face of difficulties in meeting their basic needs. The recent policies were not adequately formulated and implemented to solve these challenges.

This study takes the issues step by step, starting with the main factors of migration and formulates an appropriate policy or policies to deal with these gaps, and demonstrates a clear policy-making structure to be presented to the KRG.

Table 1- Rural to urban ratio in Erbil

| Date      | R/U <sup>2</sup> | Population | Rural population | Referenced by                    |
|-----------|------------------|------------|------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1987      | 37/63            | 1.506.147  | 557.274          | (Province, 2008)                 |
| 1996-1998 | 32.7/67.2        | 1.544.767  | 505.138          | (Stansfield, 2001, p. 77)        |
| 2000      | 20/80            | 1.584.377  | 316.875          | (F.A.O., Rural Population, 2000) |
| 2002-2004 | 20/80            | 1.623.986  | 324.797          | (Province, 2008)                 |

<sup>2</sup> Rural to urban ratio



| Date | R/U <sup>2</sup> | Population | Rural population | Referenced by                            |
|------|------------------|------------|------------------|--|
| 2007 | 24/76            | 1.664.585  | 399.500          | (I.A.U, Erbil Governorate Profile, 2010) |
| 2010 | 30.6/69.4        | 1.706.199  | 511.859          | (Statistic KRG, 2010)                    |
| 2011 | 26.8/83.2        | 1.748.853  | 468.692          | (J.A.U, 2013)                            |

*Source: Author's own construct (2017)*

### 1.3 Research Questions

This study aims to explore, describe and explain rural migration in the Kurdistan Region. It tries to determine the approach or approaches that the government has applied for policy-making for a specific goal. Furthermore, this study seeks to describe the dimension of the destruction from 1970 until 1991. This is for the purpose of naming the real problem or problems in finding a proper solution or solutions. Last but not the least, this study attempts to explain the influences of the governments' policies on reverse-migration after 1992 until 2015, and also explain why this fluctuation happens (see Tab-1). Thus, this study attempts to address three main questions:

1. How was the size of demolition from 1975 until 1991 in rural areas of the KR?
  - a. What has been demolished?
  - b. What happened to the villagers after 1975, and what were the impacts?
2. Why did villagers migrate in the rural areas in the KR?
  - a. What are the pull and push factors for migration?
  - b. Did satisfactory income influence migration?
  - c. Which segment of society intended to migrate?
3. How can villagers be motivated to return to their villages?
  - a. What are the pull and push factors for return migration?
  - b. How is the extent of satisfactory income by the villagers?
4. How have policies impacted migration after 1991 in the rural area of the KR?
  - a. How was policy formulated, followed up, and evaluated by the KRG for rural areas and what were the results?
  - b. To what extent have policies for rural development satisfied the villagers, and which segment was the most unsatisfied.

## 1.4 Proposition and Hypothesis

Propositions and hypotheses are very common terms in scientific studies. They guide the researcher and improve time and resources during the research process (Tamanja, 2014, p. 3). The term proposition is used for qualitative research and is mostly about concepts that may be judged whether the phenomenon is true or false. On the other hand, hypotheses are predictions by the researcher, which are comprised of connections among and between variables to answer quantitative questions (Creswell, 2009, p. 132).

The nature of this study needs to combine both statements in such a way as to enhance or emphasize the data gathering.

### *a. Proposition*

This study proposes that villagers fluctuate in migration due to unstable income level and risky use of capital in the rural areas in KR. Income is the engine of life and is a strong criterion that pushes people to make a rapid decision in a short term. This issue is not related just to the individual. It also concerns the parents and the future of their children.

### *b. Hypothesis*

In such situations involving public policies and people, it will be necessary to have at least a prior hypothesis or hypotheses to be tested (Paluck, Green, & Green, 2018). The hypothesis raises an expected idea that can be true or false, and it narrows and orients the study in the right direction. In rural areas of the KR, a hypothesis can be formulated to collect data on public policies and people across infrastructure and income, as follows:

- Poor rural infrastructure cannot provide satisfactory income to persuade villagers and especially farmers to return to their land.
- On the other hand, even if there is good infrastructure, policy plays an important role in increasing access to resources, and then to increased level of income

## 1.5 Significance of the Study

In a broad sense, this study builds a conceptual framework that will be tested and then generalized. The main points of this framework are to describe migrations at the international level, and then link this frame to migrations in rural areas of the Kurdistan Region. Moreover, it tries to prove that this conceptual framework is a proper structure for policy-making for the KRG. Another advantage of this study is that it gives people or villagers the ability to contribute to the policy-making process. Therefore, this study links all stakeholders together and will be a new era for policy-making in the rural areas of the Kurdistan Region.

## **CHAPTER TWO: CONCEPTS AND THEORIES OF MIGRATION**

This chapter conducts a systematic and scientific investigation into the state of science of migration. It starts from the simple definition of migration from a general human perspective and follows with the explanation of the roots of this phenomenon over time. It then reviews the categories and theoretical overviews of migration and its limits, and in addition highlights the foremost effective factors that have caused migration. This process tracks a categorization of migrations across multiple scopes and dimensions to easily communicate this phenomenon. It then reviews rural migration at the international level and presents the foremost authoritative factors that drive humans to migrate. The last section of this chapter describes the rural migrations within the Kurdistan Region with comparison to the international pattern.

### **2.1 Entrance to Migration**

Migration is an ancient phenomenon, since the beginning of humankind. Overtime, humans have migrated for several reasons, and the first migration that has been detected was the prehistoric migration by *Homo erectus* from Africa via Eurasia 1,000,000 years ago (Encyclopedia, 2016; Groeneveld, 2017). In that era, humans escaped from tough climate, which threatened their lives, and sought for a better place and more hospitable land for living (Groeneveld, 2017). Another pattern of the climate change migration occurred through western Eurasia, crossing the major mountain ranges of Europe during the Ice Age 700,000 years ago. People migrated and moved from a cold place to a warmer place (Groeneveld, 2017). Moreover, in 2000 BC in the Bronze Age, migration also occurred, when the Iranians began to expand, substantial numbers of Aryan Indian people migrated from South Asia to ancient Anatolia in South Asia (Encyclopedia, 2016; Ravindra, 2018). Additionally, in the seventeenth century, when the Puritans moved to New England (Brooks R. B., 2017), approximately 30 million Europeans migrated to America during a mass immigration in the 19th century (Shashkevich-Stanford, 2017). Furthermore, after the industrial revolution, in the Europe countries between 1815 and 1914, a great number of farmers migrated from the rural to the developed cities for work (Schrover, Industrial Revolution, 2008). Throughout history, each of these migrations occurred under certain circumstances caused by different factors.

Migration is a complex component of a population change in people's movement from one place to another place, which are called origin and destination, where the destination is not their

place of origin (Demko, J.-Ross, & H.M-Schnell, 1970, pp. 286-287; Primavera, 2005). This change in location can be for several reasons and not as a travel or a tourist and stay for leisure. According to Lee's definition, migration is “*a permanent or semi-permanent change of residence*” (Lee E. S., 1966, p. 49). By Goldstein migration is defined as a “*movement out of a rural or urban place of origin that has lasted for at least six months*” (Mberu, 2006, p. 519). Kannappan has defined migration as a “*rational but diverse process of studied responses to changing economic conditions and requirements*” (Kannappan, 1985, p. 714). In light of these definitions, migration can be interpreted as a specific instance of a human decision to leave and then settle in a new geographical location. This spatial change is deeply rooted in the realization of human desires economically, environmentally, and socially (Sinha, 2005). However, the range of these desires has no limits and, up to now, there is not a single theory that defines the entirety of migration as a dynamic phenomenon (Boghean, 2016, p.14), but the flow of migration has indeed remained dynamic.

## 2.1.1 Types of Migration

### 2.1.1.1 Internal and external migration

Migration can be classified with regards to a country's border. A border is the geographic frontier of political entities or legal jurisdictions, such as governments, sovereign states, federated states, and other subnational entities (Wheaton, Carey, & Blanchard, 1836). Crossing or not crossing the country border is a distinction between two types of migration, which are internal and external

#### 1. *Internal migration*

In the internal type of migration, people move or migrate within the country itself whether between rural and urban, rural and rural, urban and rural, or urban and urban. Similarly to the nature of the phenomenon of migration, there are many reasons behind these kinds of migrations, but the most highlighted reason is the level of the imbalance implementation of the development programs in the two places (origin and destination) in terms of economy, environment as well as socially (Mberu, 2006, p. 520; Haar, 2009, p. 17; Economic and Social Affairs, 2011; Bahns, 2005, p. 16).

In other words, the imbalance between two places creates these types of internal migrations. In 2000, UNDP reported on the global internal migration and estimated that close to 740 million people have migrated; with the highest numbers in India and China (Skeldon, 2017, p. 4). In India, the volume of internal migration in 2011 was 309 million people, accounting for 30 percent of the country's population (UNCEF, 2011, p. 2). Additionally, in 2009, China has been recorded

as having the highest number of non-permanent internal migration globally. In this year, about 145 million people migrated from rural areas to urban areas (Schmidt-Kallert, 2009). Moreover, as another example in the United States, between 1995 and 2000, nearly 308,000 people moved from New York to Florida (Perry, 2003).

These migrations in these countries, and some other countries, are caused by several factors, such as getting a better job or a better income, opportunity, escaping from poverty, lifestyle, happiness, independence, and marriage (Wondimagegnhu, 2012; UNCEF, 2011, p. 2; Hu, 2012; Schmidt-Kallert, 2009; Perry, 2003; Bahns, 2005, p. 16; Basu, 1990, p. 42). More specifically, the internal migration from rural to urban areas was found to be primarily for better wages (Bahns, 2005, p. 16; Munshi & Rosenzweig, 2016). However, this direction will be reversed when the economy declines and poverty increases in the place of destination (Dalal-Clayton, Dent, & Dubois, Rural Planning in Developing countries, 2003).

## 2. *External migration*

This form of migration crosses country borders. In this migration type, a migrant takes into account many more dimensions, such as analyses of push and pull factors and risks that might be faced in or between these two places, origin and destination (Lee E. S., 1966, p. 51). He or she should have a clear perception about the distance, risks of the path, cost of the process and the most important, relevant policies and legislations of the destination country (Ö.B & H., 2013), and sometime the migrant takes this decision without any consideration for the risk. These calculations have made for more difficult decision-making; therefore, most migrants spend much greater effort before moving (Primavera, 2005). However, people's network in the destination is a helpful factor and important for this issue.

Generally, the flow of this kind of migration is from less to more developed countries, such as the migration of people from Mexico to the USA (Wainer, 2011), or the external migration of Turkish labour to Germany (GCU, 2012). Another external migration is in Asia, whereby in 2005 about 53 million people from Bangladesh, Burma, Cambodia, China, India, Indonesia, Laos, Nepal, Pakistan, Philippines, Sri Lanka and Vietnam migrated to Brunei, Hong Kong, Japan, Singapore, South Korea and Taiwan (Castles & Miller, 2009). However, in some cases, which are rare, this direction was opposite, such as the missionaries of the Western Christian or Muslim faiths, who were travelled and lived in less developed countries, such as a number of countries in Africa, (Coffman, 2008; Kaba, 2005).

The main reason for this migration is the search for work and better income (YA, 2016, p. 19; Wainer, 2011; GCU, 2012; Castles & Miller, 2009). Nonetheless, rather than economic factors,

environmental factors play big role as well in countries such as those within in the African countries (YA, 2016), and in some cases this was also related to the migrants' personal religions.

### 2.1.1.2 Migration according to duration

When Lee defined migration as a permanent or semi-permanent change in residence, he did not specify a limitation of time. Some people (migrants) stay in the destination place only one month or two months or more, and some others stay for one year or more than five years or might remain until death. Hence, there must be some kind of measurement to get the calculation of the time migrants stay in the destination place. Therefore, migration can be categorized based on the migrant's willingness to stay in two patterns:

#### 1. *Permanent migration*

This type of migration takes place when an individual or family, or a group of people decide to leave their place of origin without the intent of returning (Mberu, 2006, p. 519), which can be done externally or internally. The significance of this migration has long been identified (Wolfe, 1966, p. 10; Roseman, 1971; Rothman, Bates, & Eckhardt, 1977). There are many examples for this type of migration, and one of these is the Turkish immigrants, who have been called the “*guest workers*”<sup>3</sup> (Bartsch, Brandt, & Steinvoth, 2010). In 1960, they Turkish workers came to Germany to work for a few years and then they must go back to their homeland, but they never returned. As another example, in recent years, cities and towns in Iraq, Sudan, Somalia, Kenya, Yemen, and Haiti have absorbed a great numbers of immigrants, who fled from conflict or disaster. Some or most of them have still not returned to their homeland (Tran, 2012). The following two examples illustrate switching of the intent to return to non-return. This often happens when the residence lasts a longer time at the place of destination and the children of the migrant's family grow up in this location, making the decision to return much more difficult.

This model of migration generally represents a reaction to an event or events in the course of life of the migrant, such as marriage, family formation, and dissolution, changes in employment, retirement, climate change and the onset of disability (Bell & Ward, 2000; Göktürk, Gramling, & Kaes, 2007, p. 171; Tran, 2012).

#### 2. *Temporary migration*

This type is one of the more common than any other types of migration and is the opposite of the permanent migration (Bell & Ward, 2000). It takes place within the state and sometimes happens

---

<sup>3</sup> In the 1960s, Turkish workers arrived in Germany to fill the demand for cheap labour in a booming post-war economy. Many of them never left, creating a minority community that changed the demographics of Germany forever (Prevezanos, 2011)

externally (Gibson, McKenzie, & Rohorua, 2013, p. 21). In this kind of migration, there is a hope for a return, so it is divided into two parts:

a. Seasonal temporary migration

This happens seasonally, lasting not more than three months, and most likely occurs within the country, because the distance between the two places plays a major role. However, there are some cases which show that this migration occurs externally, such as in the case of Australia (Mares, 2016). A very wide seasonal human migration takes place by those people who have livestock and bring their animals in the summer to a better climate to escape the heat and find more forage. However, another group of people, who have orchards, stay on their land for a while at harvest time (Wikipedia, Seasonal human migration, 2017). This can also occur with students, who study, but at the holidays they work for a few months in another place.

b. Long temporary migration

This model is the second type of the temporary migration, which takes more than three months or a year to several years. This primarily occurs as an external migration.

### 2.1.1.3 Migration by choice

Although there is no migration without a single reason, it is advisable to distinguish reasons based on a human's decision on how and whether to migrate. Regarding to this concept, migration can be divided into two aspects:

a. Voluntary migration

This kind of migration occurs when the migrant has determined some pull factor or factors and realizes that the destination location is better than what he already has. These factors can be social, political, economic or environmental factors (Zhou, 2017; Hansen, 2003). In this case, he or she will freely decide to migrate (Cassidy, 2000), and move forward with that decision. For example, the migration of the Jamaicans to the UK in 1948 falls within this scope.

b. Forced migration

This type of migration is the most complex human movement as compared to the other categories of migration. It is characterized by a sudden decision without prior knowledge or preparation by the migrant, often under abnormal conditions and force (Zhou, 2017) where people must leave their lands or their home countries in order to preserve their lives. An

example is slavery in the past of the Indian Removal Act in 1830 (Zhou, 2017). Nonetheless, the forced migration by natural crises as happened after construction of China's Three Gorges Dam is another example (Zhou, 2017). Yet another is the case of when people fled from Kabul, the capital of Afghanistan, from 2001 to 2010 where about 4.5 million people immigrated to other cities because of the internal conflicts (Tran, 2012). Another example of forced migration occurred in Rwanda, when between April and June 1994, an estimated 800,000 Rwandans were killed and the rest fled (BBC N.-1. , 2011).

## **2.1.2 Theoretical Overview of Migration**

Migration theory began with a comparison to age, gender, distance, level of education and manpower in its first theoretical development. In 1880, Ravenstein was the first researcher to discuss migration, and then followed by Dorothy Thomas in 1930 (Greenwood & Hunt, 1975). They concentrated at that time on internal migration, with most concentration on the characteristics of the migration during a time when few studies existed on the extent or the reasons of migration (Lee E. S., 1966, p. 48). Then Bogue and Hagood summed and led the current state of knowledge of migration (Jackson, 1969, p. 284). Additionally, Otis Durant Duncan, and Dudley Kirk studied the advanced theoretical development and contributed valuable ideas to this body of knowledge, but their studies were only for the United States (Lee E. S., 1966, p. 49; Jackson, 1969, p. 284). All of the researchers addressed migration in simple terms without any restrictions on place, choice, and boundaries; and additionally did not consider of any kind of interventions and obstacles between the places of origin and destination, until Lee in the 1960s (Lee E. S., 1966, p. 49).

### **2.1.2.1 Combination of the Maslow and Lee theories**

As explained in the previous sections, migration is a response to something, this thing can be related to the social or economic or environmental aspects of the origin place (Nesterova, Suslova, Tsyiganov, & Kobzeva, 2015, p. 111; Malik, 2007). This response can be understood as a situation in which the migrant has lost or does not have what he or she desired. This desire can be something necessary to his or her life or may be a requirement for life. In 1943, Maslow studied human needs with seminal research and pointed out that when someone cannot fill or meet his need or needs in his or her place of origin, he will search for them elsewhere. This potential is a personal or family fulfilment for his or her or their needs, which creates a kind of motivation. This motivation is considered a human reaction, which keeps them in continuous searching until



satisfaction is achieved<sup>4</sup>. Whereas several explanations of the need have been replicated and defined in different ways, all have agreed that these needs are what human must have. Therefore, the needs are those things where a “*human cannot live without them*” (Dictionary C. C., 2006). Maslow was successful in gathering entire definitions and ideas about these motivations, while prior to Maslow researchers were scattered in giving an answer to the explanation of human motivations and needs. They focused only on biological factors, personal achievement, and power to explain what energizes, directs, and sustains human behaviour (Huitt, 2017). However, Maslow arranged the needs in one hierarchy (pyramid) based on their influences on human response and constructed the most effective group at the bottom up to the head of the pyramid (see Fig-1). He could explain the needs clearly via two parts; which were *deficiency* and *growth* or *being*. The first part includes physiological, safety, love, and self-esteem, which Maslow defined as predominant needs (McLeod, Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs, 2017). Those provide a primary direction for a human's action. Additionally, the second part starts from the fifth level called self-actualization, in which a human being starts to turn from the basic needs to wants. Accordingly, at each level, the achievement of each need follows the achievement of the previous need, one after the other. Each need before passing to the next upper level must reach its fulfilment or saturation point (Maslow, 1943, p. 374; Huitt, 2017). Otherwise, a human feels a kind of anxiety (Lee D. , 2015). It is also important to mention that this saturation does not mean it occurs once, but must always be saturated.

The pyramid of Maslow’s theory has been constructed as follows:

The first four levels are:

1. Physiological: This includes hunger, thirst, bodily comforts, etc.
2. Safety/security: This means out of danger.
3. Belongingness and Love: This refers to affiliating with others, being accepted.
4. Esteem: This is the achievement, feeling of competence, gain of approval and recognition.
5. The fifth belongs to the being needs, which is “*Self-actualization*”, and is characterized by being problem-focused, which refers to:
  1. Incorporating an ongoing freshness of appreciation of life;
  2. A concern about personal growth; and
  3. The ability to have peak experiences (Huitt, 2017).

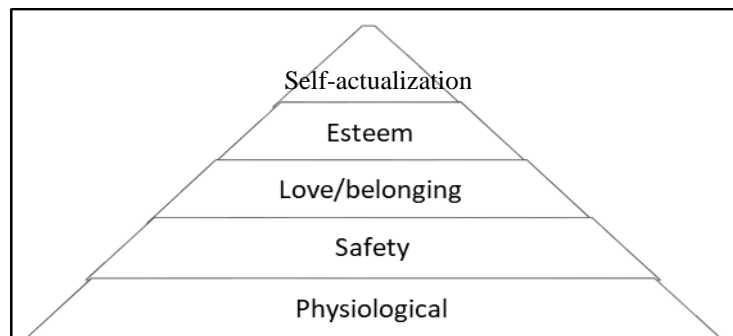
This theory could be applied in many disciplines and is considered as a successful model for several fields, such as sociology and economics (Denning, 2012; Lee D. , 2015). This is also correlated to the phenomenon of migration, as migration has been addressed as a consequence of a negative action. Nonetheless, this theory cannot be generalized on the entire scopes or dimensions

---

<sup>4</sup> Is the pleasure that you feel when you do something or get something that you wanted or needed to do or get (Dictionary C. A., 2018).

of migration, because it has defined origin or destination. If it these are considered in one side, then it can be called a vertical aspect of migration. However, the horizontal side of the migration, which are the origin and destination places and the interventions, are here lacking.

Figure 1-Maslow's hierarchy of needs (Adapted from Goble, *The Third Force*)

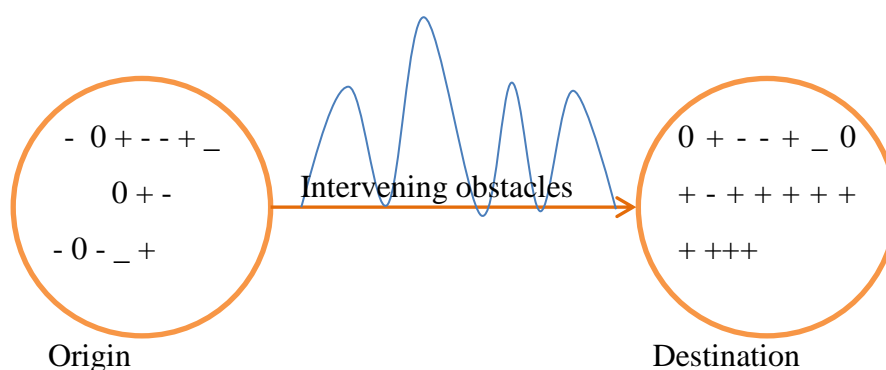


Sources: (McLeod, Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs, 2017)

Then Everett Lee in 1966 clarified in depth the dimensions of migration. He addressed this phenomenon according to three stages, which are origin place, intervention and destination place (see Fig-2). He focused on the path as a horizontal movement of to and from two places and a distance between them, where both places have positive and negative factors. He developed the ideas of the new classical and structural theories until he reached an explanation that allowed him to define peoples' movement from low to high-income areas (Tamanja, 2014, p. 9).

When a person wants to migrate, he or she tries to be aware and make a comparison between positive and negative issues in each step before taking any decision. Then, based on his or her potentials, he or she will select the best alternative.

Figure 2- Origin and destination factors and intervening obstacles in migration



Source: Adopted from Lee's Theory (Lee E. S., 1966, p. 50)

The positive (pull) and the negative (push) factors are grouped as follows:

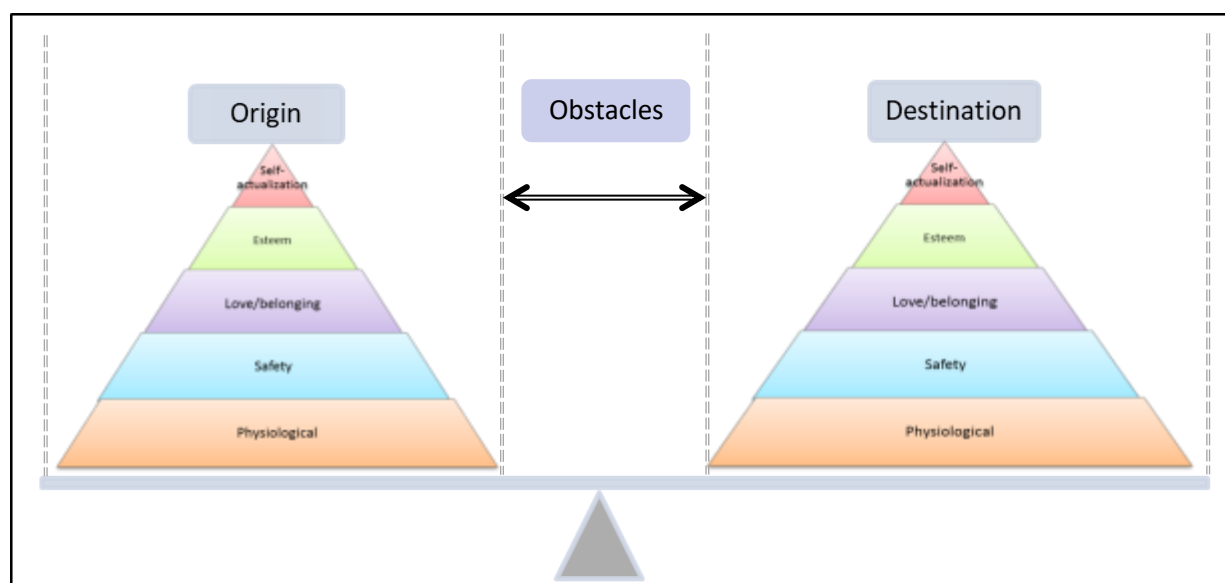
1. Push factors are those undesirable aspects, such as: a lack of job opportunities; potential desertification, drought, famine, or natural disasters; political fear or persecution, slavery, death threats or forced labour; poor medical care, loss of wealth; and lack of political or

religious freedom; pollution, or other housing or social aspects such as poor housing, landlord/tenant issues, bullying, inequity, poor chances of marrying, condemned housing and war (Hashim, 2007; Greece, 2016; I.O.M, 2004, p. 49). These factors when they are available in the place of the origin, they will be a strong motivation for migration.

2. Pull factors are the motivating factors which attract people from their origins to the place of destination. These include job opportunities, better living conditions, political and/or religious freedom, enjoyment, better education, better medical care, attractive climates, security, family links, industry and better chances for marrying (Greece, 2016; I.O.M, 2004, p. 49).

The combination of these two theories can draw a new structure of the process of migration (see Fig-3). This structure is more realistic to express the phenomenon of migration. It measures or scales the human motivations for achieving their needs and wants in the places of origin and destination origin and quantifies and qualifies their availability. However, this structure is still an individual-oriented approach.

*Figure 3-The balance of migration (BoM)*



*Source: Author's own construct (2016)*

### 2.1.2.2 Migration based on approaches of levels

In 1990, a group of researchers, including Massey, Greenwood, Borjas, and Gallup, wanted to advance the idea of internal migration beyond what Lee achieved. They presented much more detailed conceptual approaches to give a wider meaning of migration from the local context to the international level (Olejarova, 2007, p. 11). They, therefore, analysed migration in different levels of macro, meso and micro, and then the ideas were summarized by Faist into one framework (Olejarova, 2007, p. 11; Malik, 2007) (see Tab-2). These levels provided a new understanding of

the human interaction (Blackstone, 2017), and were valuable for policy formulation (Caldwell & Mays, 2012, p. 8). Moreover, in each level, migration was dealt with depending on the social, economic and environmental aspects; and additionally, each one of these levels has a certain role and acts on a certain class of society (Caldwell & Mays, 2012, p. 8). Hence, the theories of migration have been distributed in three parts (see Tab-2).

*Table 2-The theories of migration regarding the levels*

| Level           | Macro-level  | Meso-level   | Micro-level  |
|-----------------|--|--|--|
| Migration cause | Perpetuation: Macro-level opportunity structure  | Perpetuation: Collectives/ social networks   | Individual values/ desires/ expectancies   |
| Target group    | e.g. economic structure (income and employment opportunities differentials)  | e.g. social ties   | e.g. improving survival, wealth etc.   |
| Theories        | Main theories:<br>Neoclassical macro migration theory<br>Migration as a system<br>Dual Labour market Theory<br>World systems theory<br>Mobility transition | Main theories:<br>Social capital theory<br>Institutional theory<br>Network theory<br>Cumulative causation<br>New economics of labour migration | Main theories:<br>Lee's push/ pull factors<br>Neoclassical micro migration theory<br>Behavioral models<br>Theory of social systems |

*Source: Modified from Faist (Hagen -Zanker, 2008, p. 5)*

### 2.1.2.3 Migration at macro-level

The five theories of neoclassical macro migration, migration as a system, dual labour market, world systems theory and mobility transition are those that occupied and fitted to the macro level (see Tab-3). Migration occurs because of different economic development between two places. This causes geographical differences in the supply and demand of labour and this occurs mostly between rural and urban (Hagen -Zanker, 2008, p. 6). People at this level are looking for employment or a better job opportunity for gaining a better income (Haas, 2014, p. 7). The macro-level approaches perceive the importance of the political-economic contexts and institutional arrangements (Hagen -Zanker, 2008). They focus on linking the state to the market and society in a wide range and involve all relevant stakeholders in society through the decision-making process. Moreover, they provide a way to establish a framework for policy and strategy to the market challenges and sustainability (SPRG, 2017).

Table 3- The theories of migration at macro-level with their factors, causes and goals

| Level | Theory   | Factor  | Cause   | Target                                     |
|-------|--|---|---|--|
| Macro | Neoclassical Models in Macroeconomics (Lewis, Ranis and Fei 1954-1961) | Economic development  | Internal pulled rural-urban migration                                     | Surplus-demand of labour market and income |
|       | Todaro and Harris 1970   | Employment opportunity  | Internal pulled rural-urban migration                                     | Labour market and income                   |
|       | Rural-urban migration (Mabogunje 1970)                                 | Social & economic conditions, government policies, transport & communications infrastructure etc. | Internal pulled rural-urban and international migration                   | Better quality of life                     |
|       | World Systems (Wallerstein 1974)                                       | Economic oriented   | Global migration And pull forced migration                                | Labour market demand                       |
|       | Dual Labour Market (prior 1979)  | Temporary Employment for opportunity  | Temporally internal pulled factor among the sector in developed countries | Labour market, income and prestige         |

Source: Adopted from Hagen-Zanker (2008) (Hagenn -Zanker, 2008, p. 6)

Table 2 shows us that the characteristic of migrations at this level are as follows:

1. At this level migration can occur internally and externally.
2. The direction of migration is from rural to urban.
3. People migrate for certain reasons and are seeking a better job to ensure a better income, better life and lifestyle.
4. The distance between the origin place and destination place plays a major role, specifically, in the case of external migration (Haas, 2014, p. 26).
5. Policy-makers have a strong role in this type of migration (Vutthisomboon, 1998).

#### 2.1.2.4 Migration at micro level

Micro-level migration was born at the inception of microeconomic models in 1980 (Hagen - Zanker, 2008, p. 4). This level includes those individuals, who are seeking a better income or satisfaction for himself or herself or for their families (see Tab-4). The head of the family or the

strongest person or persons in the family performs this task and makes decisions (Hagen -Zanker, 2008, p. 5). In the perspective of Lee's theory, this person should be able to analyze the positives and negatives in both places of origin and destination. Additionally, he must be prepared to face the interventions between these two places. Therefore, at this level, migration depends on the person's ability within a family to migrate from the origin to the destination. Three theories, Lee, neoclassical micro-level or human capital, and behavioural models of both model and social systems, are set in this level (see Tab-4).

*Table 4-The theories of migration at micro-level with its factor, cause and goal*

| Level | Theory   | Factor  | Caused   | Target                   |
|-------|--|---|--|--------------------------|
| Micro | Neoclassical micro-level or human capital (1962) | Labour demand and supply, more economic oriented                  | Selective pulled migrant internally and externally | Labour market and income |
|       | Lee (1966)                                       | Positivity and negativity in both places <sup>5</sup>             | Internal and external (Lee E. S., 1966, p. 49)     | Satisfaction             |
|       | Behavioral models both model 1965-1973           | Economic and non-economic factors and societal influence oriented | Internal migration                                 | Satisfaction             |
|       | Social systems 1981                              | Economic, power and prestige                                      | Internal and external                              | Desires                  |

*Source: Author's own construct (2015)*

The behavioural models were a migration based on the individual perception, satisfaction, and leisure. This type of migration is similar to the cost-benefit migration when someone migrates based on more than economic consideration and these can be values and expectations that depend on personal and household characteristics and societal norms, for example security or self-fulfilment (Hagen -Zanker, 2008, p. 11).

Migration at the micro-level is characterised by the following:

1. At this level migration can occur internally and externally.
2. The direction of migration is from the less developed to the most developed areas.
3. People migrate at this level for specific reasons and are seeking a better job or a better income, meeting their desires and satisfaction.

<sup>5</sup> Bentham's calculus of pleasure and pain, the calculus of +'s and -'s at origin and destination is always inexact (Lee E. S., 1966, p. 50)

### 2.1.2.5 Migration at meso-level

Despite the fact that the two previous levels can explain many aspects about migration, there is still a gap between them. Therefore, a new level has been developed in-between these two levels called the meso-level. It was born from the transmission from a combination of the macro and micro levels. This model originating from 1970 by Peter Morrison was proposed in 1980-1990 by Martin Cadwallader and Oleg Staroverov (Aleshkovski & Iontsev, 1990, p. 3). Then, Pierre Bourdieu followed this model in 1986, and expanded this model in a broader view and addressed that this level is relevant to human society (Palloni, Massey, Ceballos, Espinosa, & Spittel, 2001, p. 1263) (see Tab-5). That is because this level has been tightly connected to networks of people and the other symbolic ties such as ethnic, national, political, or religious organizations that are encouraging migration (Olijarova, 2007, p. 16). The networks and relationships facilitate the process of migration in many aspects, and help the migrant make his or her decision easily from start to end including crossing interventions between places of origin and destination. Social capital was a major part of this level. The sociologists Bourdieu and Wacquant argued that “*social capital is the sum of the resources, actual or virtual, that accrue to an individual or a group by virtue of possessing a durable network of more or less institutionalized relationships of mutual acquaintance and recognition*” (Bourdieu, Pierre, & Wacquant, 1992, p. 119). In more detail, the sociologist Thomas Faist utilized this model (meso-level) of migration, and linked the rational individual migration decision models to the structural components of the macro migration models (Hagen -Zanker, 2008).

The two famous theories of social capital and international migration, and institutional theory are set at this level. They described the impact of the networks on migration. Moreover, they argued that the peoples’ networks have facilitated the adaptation of the new migrant to the new world; nonetheless, these networks shortened time to find a job (see Tab-5).

*Table 5-The theories of migration at meso level with its factors, causes and goals*

| Level | Theory                  | Factor   | Cause         | Target                               |
|-------|-------------------------|--|---------------|--------------------------------------|
| Meso  | Social capital and      | Family-based network effect and the community ties | Out-migration | Follow the former migrant the leader |
|       | International migration |  |               |                                      |
|       | Institutional theory    | Recruiting institution                             | Out-migration | Job opportunity                      |

*Source: Author’s own construct (2016)*

Migration at the meso-level is characterised by the following:

1- At this level migration primarily takes place externally

2- A migrant follows the first person(s), who already migrated, potentially for a job or a family reunion

## 2.2 Migration and Decision-making

Decision-making is a process of choosing or doing something for a certain goal or it is an action of choice for a single issue between alternatives. It will be taken or done by a single person or a group of people, potentially by one person or more than one. This choice comes after a series of steps, which are identifying the decision, gathering relevant information, identifying the alternatives, weighing the evidence, choosing among alternatives, taking action, and reviewing your decision and its consequences (Dartmouth, 2018). These steps are also handled differently depending on the type of person or people and their situation or which problem they have and for which goal.

In migration, decision-making depends upon the capability of the migrant or the people in the migrants' environment. In addition, it depends on the type of migration, either external or internal. Therefore, it can be made much more complex when the destination is out of the country. The steps of decision-making by the migrant must be clear before taking any action or decision. For example, the migrant must try as best as possible to gather as much information as he can about the destination place. Additionally, the searching process starts from a personal contact and then becomes wider through using other sources such as the Internet. Sometimes when the migrant is a well-educated, he or she seeks to find other advanced information about the legislative issues in that country. Therefore, it is not easy to classify the levels of decision making by each person, because some steps can be done based on the migrant's awareness and it is not similar for all migrants.

As previously stated a strong person decides or takes a decision and can be called a leader. He or she can be considered as stronger when he or she has money, or is in good health, is well educated, or he or she has a wide network of personal contacts. In most developing countries, these individuals are often males, and sometimes females; while the underage persons are typically followers and do not participate in decision-making on migration (Lee E. S., 1966, p. 51). Lee explained decision-making in four factors (Lee E. S., 1966, pp. 49-50), which are:

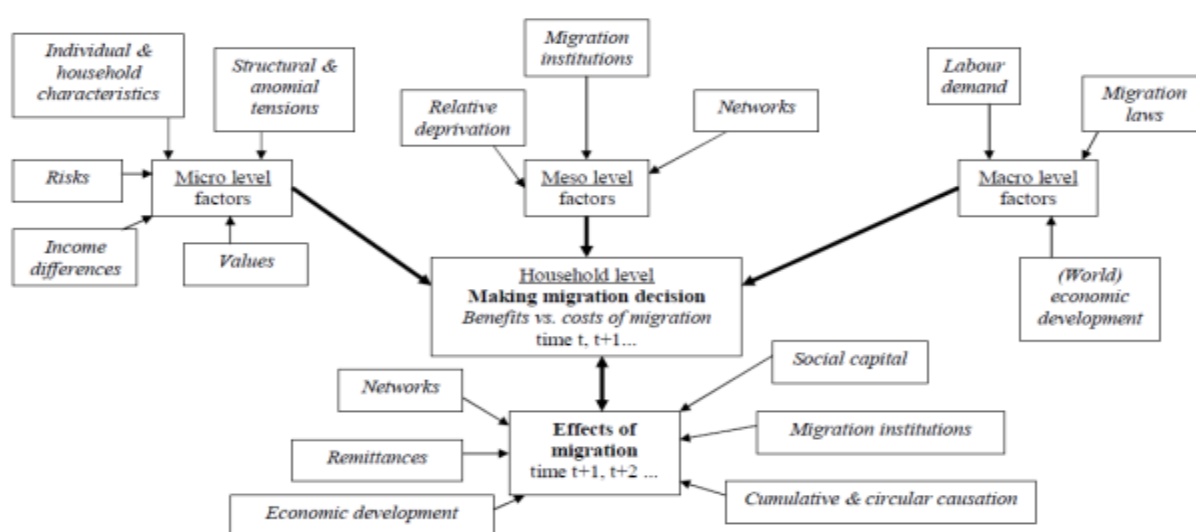
1. Factors associated with the area of origin
2. Factors associated with the area of destination
3. Intervening obstacles
4. Personal factors

Nonetheless, Hagen-Zanker gave further clarification on decision making. She argued that the



decision-making can be divided into three groups (see Fig-4). At the macro group, decision making is based on the rate of development, laws of the destination place and labour market demand. However, at the meso-level, decision making is based on the networks, institutions and relative deprivation. Last but not the least, the decision-making at the micro-level depends on structure and tension; a person's characteristics, risks, income imbalance and values. However, it is worth mentioning that these processes for making a decision can't be applied to forced migration, because in this kind of migration there is no choice to be made for selecting a destination place.

Figure 4- General framework of migration decision making



Source: (Hagen -Zanker, 2008)

## 2.3 Rural Migration

### 2.3.1 Rural and Urban

A pair of common terms that are often repeated within issues related to regional planning and management are rural and urban. Rural is a place where agricultural jobs are people's main task (Owusu, 2005), such as in small towns and villages. It is a place where food is produced and supplied to other areas (Massuanganhe, 2008, p. vi). Furthermore, rural classifies a geographic area, which is outside of urban areas (such as towns and cities), and is a settlement where the rate of urbanisation<sup>6</sup> is quite slow (Surbhi, Difference Between Urban and Rural, 2016). Dalal-Clyton and Dent and Dubois defined rural as "the sparsely populated areas in which people farm or depend on natural resources, including villages and small towns that are dispersed through these areas" (Dalal-Clayton, Dent, & Dubois, Rural Planning in Developing countries, 2003, p. 8). In

<sup>6</sup> An increase in a population in cities and towns versus rural areas

contrast, urban is a word used to describe an area that has a much higher density than the surrounding area (Jack, 2006). It refers to a human settlement where the rate of urbanisation and industrialisation is high (Surbhi, Difference Between Urban and Rural, 2016).

These two areas are classified based on human density, because human presence is often at the centre of a government's plan. Hence, the definitions of these two terms, and specifically for the rural area, in each country are different. For example, in the United States of America any area with less than 10,000 people is considered a rural area (Loans, 2014). In India, a town with a maximum population of 15,000 is considered rural (Focus, 2001). In Japan, any cluster of fewer than 30,000 people is considered rural, and in Albania a group of more than 400 inhabitants is regarded as an urban (Britannica, 2018). In general, these two areas have specific variances at several points, and can be categorized by number of criteria (see Tab-6).

*Table 6- Difference bewteen rural and urban areas*

|                           | Rural  | Urban  |
|---------------------------|--|--|
| Population density        | Lower than urban areas   | Higher than rural areas  |
| Life style                | The life in rural areas is simple and relaxed.   | Whereas in urban areas it is fast and complicated  |
| Administrative settlement | The rural settlement includes villages and hamlets   | The urban settlement includes cities and towns   |
| Nature isolation          | Direct contact with the nature   | Greatly isolated from nature   |
| Job                       | The main source of employment is agricultural projects, and sometimes other small jobs, which are called non-farm projects | People are engaged in non-agricultural work, i.e. trade, commerce or in the service industry |
| Development               | Less developed   | More developed   |
| Homogeneity               | More homogeneous than the urban areas  | Less homogeneous   |
| Social mobility           | Less intensive   | More intensive   |
| Standard of living        | Low  | Higher   |
| Social networks           | Very high  | Weak   |

*Source: Author's own construct from the sources (Surbhi, Difference Between Urban and Rural, 2016; Agri-Info, 2015)*

### **2.3.2 Interconnection of Rural and Urban Areas**

Although both rural and urban areas have their individual characteristics, they are always interrelated and cannot be completely separated from one another. As it has been previously

explained, most foods are produced locally, particularly in the rural areas, and delivered and consumed within reasonable periods of time in the markets. In the rural area, people who are called villagers produce products for two purposes, one to meet the needs of their families' nutrition and the other to obtain some financial resources to cover other needs (Culture, 2016). The financial source is obtained through the exchange of products in the market through "*selling*". Hence, the villages are tightly connected to the markets and the cities have a more proper market due to a bigger population (Lynch, 2005, p. 53; Owusu, 2005). The buying and selling through markets is not the only commonality between these two kinds of areas. They have been connected through many other ways, such as through administrative issues. Consequently, rural and urban both have the power to push socio-economic and cultural aspects, and their linkages have important implications for progress in the development process (Lynch, 2005, p. 22), in particular in balancing and sharing income, human capital, and Agro-products. These linkages can be understood spatially and sectorally into two parts.

#### 1. Spatial linkage

This link includes the flows of agricultural commodities from the rural to the urban markets. The market and its size are often based on the density of people in the area and the size of end consumer. For rural areas, they have small markets and food producers cannot sell all their products when the capacity of the market does not permit them to do so, due to the market's demand and supply. Thus, this flow is mostly directed toward the cities' markets.

#### 2. Sectorial linkage

The second link is the sectorial connection, such as the agricultural sector with the industrial or manufacturing sector. In this form, the agricultural producers are taking the role of the raw materials supplier "*input*". On the other hand, urban markets supply agricultural enterprises with fertilizers, pesticides, machinery and equipment (Mushi, 2003, p.1). This path from-to the rural or urban areas is totally dependent upon the geographical location of the suppliers.

### **2.3.3 History, Types, and Challenges of Rural Migration**

The first rural migration which has been described was in the eighteenth century. It was by Ravenstein when he studied the internal migration of women from the rural to urban areas for working (Ravenstein, 1885, p. 196). This migration occurred when the cities became more industrialized zones with better job opportunities and better income. Two big examples occur in the new century after 2000, with internal migration in China and India. Additionally, in Bangladesh 2/3<sup>rd</sup>s of the internal migrants were from rural areas (Afsar, 2003). Furthermore, in

Ghana, half of the internal migration is from the rural areas (G.S.S, 2008). Internal migration also occurred from rural to urban not only due to the economic situation, but rather due to climate change, such as in sub-Saharan Africa (Organization, 2017). Nonetheless, rural migration happened externally, such as the migration by the Italians, who migrated to Australia in the middle 1800 or after the World War One (MacRitchie, Toia, & Polito, 2011), and the migration of the Turkish farmers to Australia on October 5, 1967 (Ankara, 2008).

Globally, rural areas face many challenges. Relatively speaking, two main challenges have greatly affected the rural areas; these are poverty and migration and they are described as follows:

**Poverty:** The Rural Poverty Report (2001) shows that, in many parts of the world, rural areas have become the worst and poorest places (OPHI, 2014), specifically in Africa and South Asia (Malik, 2007). There are many issues that have created poverty such as: climate change, production procedures and food prices, low levels of investment, weak rural infrastructure, grazing land, lack of access to drinking water, inadequate education options and poor healthcare, lack of land titles, legal uncertainty and low participation in decision-making processes, and additionally issues such as market access, perfection, service, and key information (Mayer-Rühen, Bartels, Urban, Schmidt-Kallert, & others, 1999, p. 3; Melik, 2010). Additionally, these areas have issues related to the insufficient policies that have not paid any attention to improving the agricultural sector (F.A.O.a, 2018).

**Migration:** In many cases, migration was caused by poverty or the fear of becoming poor, both due to environmental factors or economic crises and sometimes due to social problems. However, forced migration is primarily a result of conflict and insecurity. These have made the rural to be a place for crises and challenges. Annually, a very large number of people migrate from rural areas to another place to maintain their survival, particularly where annual global reports have shown this in Africa (Afric, 2000, p. 35), China (Reuters, 2014), and India (Mitra & Murayama, 2008, p. 1). This depopulation has impacted state population density for both rural and urban areas. On the one hand, it has caused a significant shortage of young labour workers and skilled people in rural areas. On the other hand, this has caused a rapid population growth in urban areas (Lynch, 2005, p. 97).

## 2.4 Conclusion

As it has been planned for this chapter, the investigation and description of the main migratory patterns have been covered (see Fig-5). Migrations occurred in varied patterns by human and generally they had occurred from or for one or a set of purposes by one individual, family or a

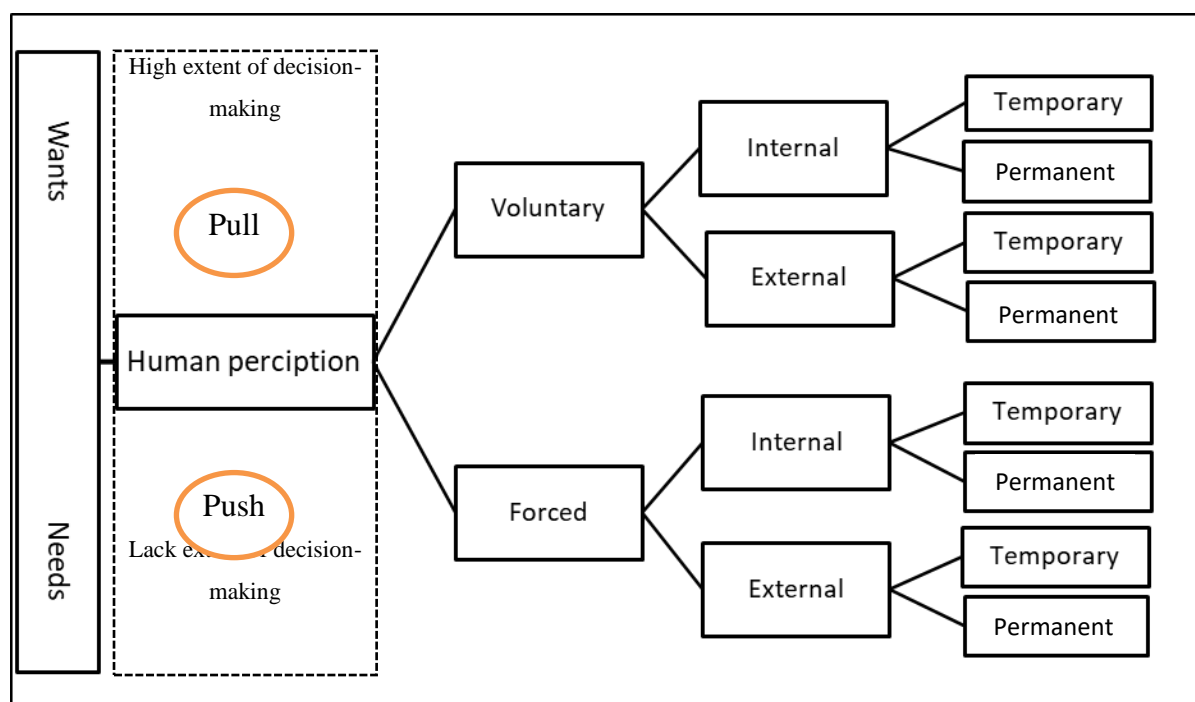
group of individuals. In addition, the main causes and consequences of migration were revealed in both rural and urban areas. Last but not least, through the rationality of migration theories, a new framework for the migrations path can be formulated, which will be explained in detail later. This framework can be used for the migrations in the KR as well.

Human migrations are an unstoppable phenomenon, since the beginning of human origins until today. It is a spatial change of location from a place to another place over time. In this regard, it has four aspects including characteristics of the two places (origin and destination), and distance between them, in addition to time duration.

People migrate when they or their family members were in an undesirable situation in the place of origin, or when there was a fear of the coming of an undesirable situation, which created a kind of motivation. This motivation has been driven by the factors of pull and push in the both places of destination and origin. Thus, migration occurs via a motivation for change in place, which encourages people to think about this change.

Migration can be split up into voluntary and forced migrations based on the human perception for change. The single dissimilarity between these two migration categories is the right of choice of the destination place, which is not available or very limited in the pattern of forced migration. Moreover, both voluntary and forced migrations might occur internally or externally, and then can be temporary or permanent. In more detail, the voluntary migration happens by the pull factors drivers; and the forced migration occurs with the push factors as drivers. There is also another forced migration, which is not fully compatible with the regular forced migration. This occurs in very cruel and harsh conditions, although there is no kind of place choosing. In this case, the migrants have been treated like prisoners who committed and were sentenced to a crime. These types of migrations have occurred several times, such as examples of the massacre of the Armenians by the Ottoman army or the genocide of the Jews by the Hitler regime or the Anfal campaign by Saddam's regime. This research titles this type of migration as "*forced extreme migration*", which differs somewhat from regular forced migration, and a part of this study is related to this kind of migration.

Figure 5-Arrangement of migration types



Source: Author's own construct (2017)

Accordingly, migration can be determined from the literature that people have migrated from their origin for a certain purpose (either the need or want stuffs), when they have not found these in their places or origin. The most frequent purposes were for escaping from poverty and wars or gaining better income or choosing a different lifestyle. The two first issues are correlated to this study.

### 1. Poverty

Poverty is a very familiar issue in the developing countries (Francis, 2006, p. 1), and has a great potential to drive migration forward (Yaquib & Haan, 2008). People always migrate from the poor to the rich areas, or from the less developed to more developed places (Yaquib & Haan, 2008, p. 6), where often the less developed are the rural areas. Poverty is defined as “*the scarcity or the lack of a certain (variant) amount of material possessions or money*” (UNESCO, Poverty, 2007). Thus, income and money are the most highlighted in this issue. It is multi-scope and has different levels, such as absolute poverty<sup>7</sup>, relative poverty, and extreme poverty<sup>8</sup>. It is highly relevant for the social, economic, and political elements. It is considered as one of the forced and pushes factor drivers.

### 2. Income

<sup>7</sup> measures poverty in relation to the amount of money necessary to meet basic needs such as food, clothing, and shelter (UNESCO, Poverty, 2007)

<sup>8</sup> is set to the possession of less than \$1 a day (UNESCO, Poverty, 2007)

Income is the consumption and savings opportunity gained by an entity within a specified timeframe, which is generally expressed in monetary terms (NG, 2018). This monetary source is for covering or meeting the individual or families' requirements, such as foodstuff, medical stuff, or other stuff, and it is a tool for reducing risks for a specific class of society (Karttunen, 2009; Wondimagegnhu, 2012). Income is defined as "*money or other forms of payment (received periodically or regularly) from commerce, employment, endowment, investment, royalties, etc.*" (Dictionary B. , 2017). This monetary earning can be monthly, as a salary, or can be daily as a wage; however, there are other types of these earnings such as profits, interests' payments, rents, and other forms of earnings (Case & Fair, 2007).

Income is one of the criteria that the social structure has been categorized by (Wyatt-Nichol & Brown, 2013, p. 189). Based on the amount of the money which someone earns, Weber and Warner (1947 and 1949) divided society into three main classes; these classes are lower, middle and upper classes. In the lower class, people in this class are struggling with their lives and they are very close to the poverty line. However, the range of the income for this class is different in each country, and depends upon the monthly earnings and consumption (Meyer & Sullivan, 2003, p. 34). For example, in the USA, in 2009, the lower class income was rated at \$25,000/annum (DeNavas-Walt, Proctor, & Smith, 2010; Academy, 2012). In this class, people are welfare-oriented and welfare can be achieved via five elements (Fujimura, 2000):

1. Social security programs
2. Central and local governments as the managerial core of the system
3. Social recognition and legislation of fundamental human rights, which support the system's establishment at the ideological level
4. Justification of state intervention in the economic sphere to achieve full employment
5. Realization of mass democracy based on the principle of parliamentarianism
6. Better decision making

In the middle class, people are living in-between welfare and lives with good well-being. The last class is the upper class; in which people are well-being oriented, which is outside the frame of this study.

In rural areas, both farm and non-farm projects are accounted for as income generators (Carletto, et al., 2007, p. 173). The farm projects are channels that farmers can use to obtain money monthly or seasonally in return, which is called profit. However, the amounts of profit are not fixed and not guaranteed. The amounts are closely connected to a various factors that control production and sales in the markets.

The main role of this income is to save people from a number of risks, from which poverty is one of these risks. Income provides a better quality of life; and additionally, people with a better income can better meet their satisfaction (Meyer & Sullivan, 2003, p. 34; Stutzer, 2003). However, satisfaction can be obtained when “*the contentment one feels [has been achieved] when one has fulfilled a desire, need, or expectation*” (Collection, 2003-2012).

Migration features a dual result on the places of origin and destination. In the place of origin, migration could cause speedy human evacuation in the return it reduce unemployment and improve income distribution and reduce the difference and balance financial gain. In addition, in the place of destination, migrations could increase unemployment, and also occupy the labour demand with more skilled labour and makes more culturally diverse environment as it happened after the WWII in Germany (Lewis, 1982; Eder & Halla, 2018; Standing, 1984, p. 1; Kröhnert, 2009; Basu, 1990; Luo, Xubei; Zhu, Nong, 2008, p. 25; Today, 2017).

## **2.5 Migrations in The KR**

The types and the dimensions of migration have been described internationally. This study goes deeper to address migrations in the Kurdistan Region (KR) of Iraq throughout history because some events are related to the region’s current situation. A brief explanation of Kurdistan and the Kurdish nation is first provided. The word for Kurdistan consists of two words, Kurd as a nation and Stan meaning a state or land. Kurds are an ancient nation that lived around the Zagros Mountains thousands of years ago, before the birth of the country of Iraq. As a point of reference, before 401 B.C., Xenophon mentioned in the “*Loeb edition*” that he faced a nation in the Zagros Mountains (Polk, 2003; UN, Xenophon & the Kurds in 400BC, 1991). The Kurdistan Region is a part of the four other parts of Kurdistan and is located in the north of Iraq and after 2005 became a federal region of the new Iraq after the fall of Saddam Hussein’s regime.

### **2.5.1 The Ottoman Era 1532-1917**

The Ottomans ruled Iraq for more than 400 years. The country of Iraq during the Ottoman era was comprised of four states, called “*Wilayat*” or regions. These were Mosul, Baghdad, Basra, and Shehrzor. Mosul and Shehrzor formed the predominantly Kurdish region (Altonji, 2016; Beyat, 2007; IWL, 2014). These regions were characterized by their fertile land, with several secure water sources where the sources came from the mountains, from melted snow, and from rivers of the Tigris and Euphrates. At that time agricultural projects were the main resource for the villagers' lives. In 1858 a new law was enacted for land properties (Davidson & Hitti, 1988). The land was classified into several classes:



1. Land owners, those lands that are owned by the individuals and registered in Tapo<sup>9</sup>
2. The suspended territories: those whose use benefits the public
3. The dead land, which has no benefit
4. Abandoned land: state-owned and residential land that may be used for grassland

This law had split the society into two layers, the first was the Aghas<sup>10</sup> (Bruinessen, 1992, p. 6) and the second was the peasants or farmers. The land was taken from the villagers and handed over to the Aghas, who fully obeyed the Ottoman sultans and Wallis<sup>11</sup>. Specifically, at the time of Midhat Pasha 1869 – 1872 (Sulaiman, 2013, p. 6), Pasha endowed most of the fertile lands to the military men, relatives, the religious men and to other people (Bruinessen, 1992, p. 6). To this day, some of these rules still lead the agricultural sector. In addition, in north-eastern Iraq, a number of Kurdish families have been replaced by Arab families, particularly in Kirkuk (Saeed, 2019).

### **2.5.2 The Kingdom's Era of Iraq 1918-1957**

After the era of the Ottoman's empire, a kingdom system ruled Iraq. It followed the same laws and regulations that had been applied before (Hussein, 2015). The Aghas controlled the agricultural lands. A hundred hectares of lands belonged to them, while the farmers had nothing; they were working as a labourer or instead for a portion of the annual yields. This era marked the age of persecution in KR (Abbas, 2012, p. 11). Within the other parts of Iraq especially near Baghdad, the first Iraqi's King Faisal forced the Kurdish families in Khanaqin<sup>12</sup> to sell their lands at a cheap price. Additionally, for those villagers who had retained their land, they were permitted to keep ten percent from their annual yields and deliver the rests to the Kings' storages (Al-Karkhi, 2012). These operations have put these families into abject poverty, and most of them migrated to cities to find a better life.

### **2.5.3 Republic Era (Abdulkareem Qasim's era) 1958 – 1963**

In the last two eras, the villagers in the KR were given no equality, and the level of illiteracy has become very high, specifically in rural areas when the population density of rural to urban was 70-30 (Hussein, 2015). This situation lasted until the day of the reign of Abdul-Karim Qasim on 14, July 1958 (Bruinessen, 1992, S. 25; Hussein, 2015). He focused on providing some equality for the Iraqi society, especially for the farmers. He abolished the feudal system and replaced these with new rules on land reclamation (Hussein, 2015), which liberated the peasants under the ruling of the Aghas. In addition, he provided an atmosphere for the farmers to have the freedom to

---

<sup>9</sup> Directorate of the real estate and property registration

<sup>10</sup> These people who were chosen by the Wallies and ruled the villagers

<sup>11</sup> The heads of the Ottoman's empire in the regions are named Wally

<sup>12</sup> It is a district area of the city of Kirkuk.

participate in decisions about their lives. Moreover, he reduced illiteracy by the opening of plenty of schools and removed restrictions for women to attend. Therefore, the era of Abdul-Karim Qasim was a big turn in social justice for the Iraqis and the Kurds; and in this era, a great number of the villagers' families returned to their lands in the rural areas. Nonetheless, after the Agrarian Reform Law No. 30 in 1958, in the city of Mosul, a wide range of the agrarian lands were given to Arabic families who had been brought from the middle and south of Iraq (Muhammed, Omar, Kakayi, & Haji, 2003, p. 14).

Despite the calm for a period of time in all areas of Iraq, in 1961, the battle started again between the Kurdish forces and the Iraqi army, and the government's military captured Barzan, Mazne, Tobzawa, and Saqsaq<sup>13</sup> (UCA, 2017).

#### **2.5.4 The Era of The Ba'ath Party 1963-1990**

On February 8, 1963, Iraq was seized by the Ba'ath party<sup>14</sup> and replaced the Qasim's group (Kafala, 2003). A new Iraqi government was established despite the fact that interior conflicts were not finished. On January 1966, the government's military attacked the Kurdish forces which resulted in 10,000 deaths and displaced 80,000 individuals (UCA, 2017). After four years, the Baath's government opened wide-ranging negotiations with all oppositions; the Kurd resistance forces in the north were one of them. The negotiation with the Kurds was for autonomy for the Kurdistan Region. This was approved on 11 March 1970, in which a decision for the autonomy was issued by the Council of the Revolutionary Command (M.E.R.I.P., 1974, p26). The Kurds had more freedom and became the second formal nation in Iraq. But this agreement did not last long. On 11 March 1974, the Iraqi government broke this agreement one-sidedly and the agreement was never enforced again. The Iraqi army launched an operation and attacked the Kurdish political parties when the Kurdistan Democratic Party<sup>15</sup> led the forces at that time. The Iraqi army pushed out 100,000 people, including Peshmerga<sup>16</sup> and their families with other civilians, to the Iranian border where they became refugees in Iran (UCA, 2017). However, on 6 May 1975, the Iraqi government agreed to the Algerian Convention<sup>17</sup> (Sallayi, 2015). This agreement obliged Iraq to grant half of the concession of Shatt Al-Arab and part of the border territory to Iran (Botany, 2012). In return, Iran has been obliged to stop supporting the Kurdish forces. In consequence, the Kurdish forces (Peshmerga) had no choice except to continue fighting. On 26 May 1976, the

---

<sup>13</sup> These are sub-districts in the Mergasur districts in the Kurdistan Region

<sup>14</sup> The party's ideology is pan-Arab, secular nationalism (Kafala, 2003)

<sup>15</sup> Kurdistan Democratic Party

<sup>16</sup> The Kurdish military forces

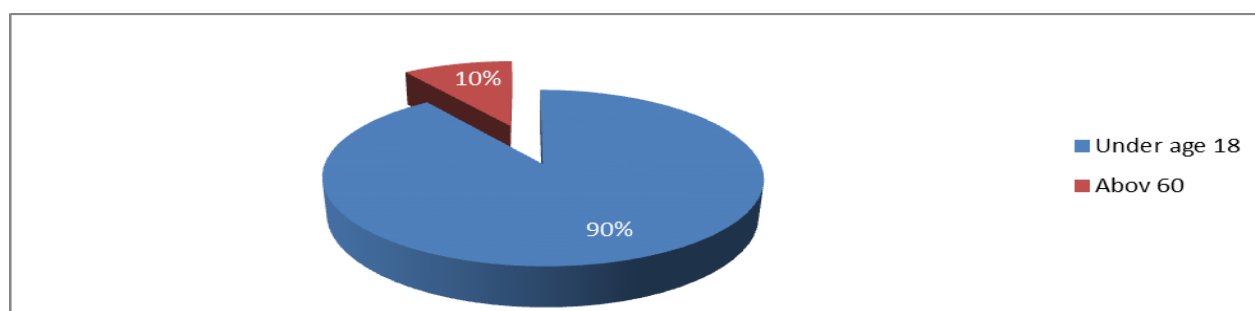
<sup>17</sup> The content of this agreement was that Iraq must give a part of land in south-east to Iran, and Iran must stop its support to the Kurdish.

Peshmerga reorganized their structure in Iran and began leading a revolution with the battle called Gulan (Al-Esyani, 2014), which inflicted heavy damage on the Iraqi army. Despite many resources that have been spent and many people who have been killed, the Iraqi government was not able to win this battle and lost the land. During these battles, which were mostly in the rural areas and lasted for a few years, a huge number of people migrated and many villages were destroyed.

### 2.5.5 The First Genocide

In pursuing revenge for its loss, the Iraqi government changed its strategy. It used public forces<sup>18</sup> to squeeze the Kurdish forces. On 31 July 1983, the government brought 8,000 Kurdish people from Mergasur<sup>19</sup>, particularly those who couldn't escape to Iran. Most of them, specifically the males, were killed as Saddam Husain stated in a video “*we sent them<sup>20</sup>, those whom have been captured, to the hell*” (Tashan, 2014; KRP, 2000; Al-Shammary, 2010; Qurbany, 2013). However, the rest of these people were transferred to the camps which were called forced residential compounds or the modern villages. This mass murder was genocide against the Kurds. It was not just for the adults; however, roughly of the amount 10% of the persons were the children (Qurbany, 2013, p. 47; Erwani, 2013) (see Fig-6). As evidence to this claim, a group of investigators found remains of those killed in the different parts of Iraq, which included women, men, and children (Tashan, 2014).

Figure 6- The Iraqi army killed the ages 16 and above 60 in this campaign



Source: Adopted from the data by (Erwani, 2013)

This campaign was a systematic process of imprisonment, deportation and murder. In addition, the survivors, who were not killed and released, lived for many years away from their villages. It needs to be noted that these rural areas, specifically along the border of Iraq-Iran, have been planted with mines (Government K. , 2008; Khoshnaw, 2007; Jader, 2015).

<sup>18</sup> Besides the Iraqi army, the government established several forces as militia to act like an army

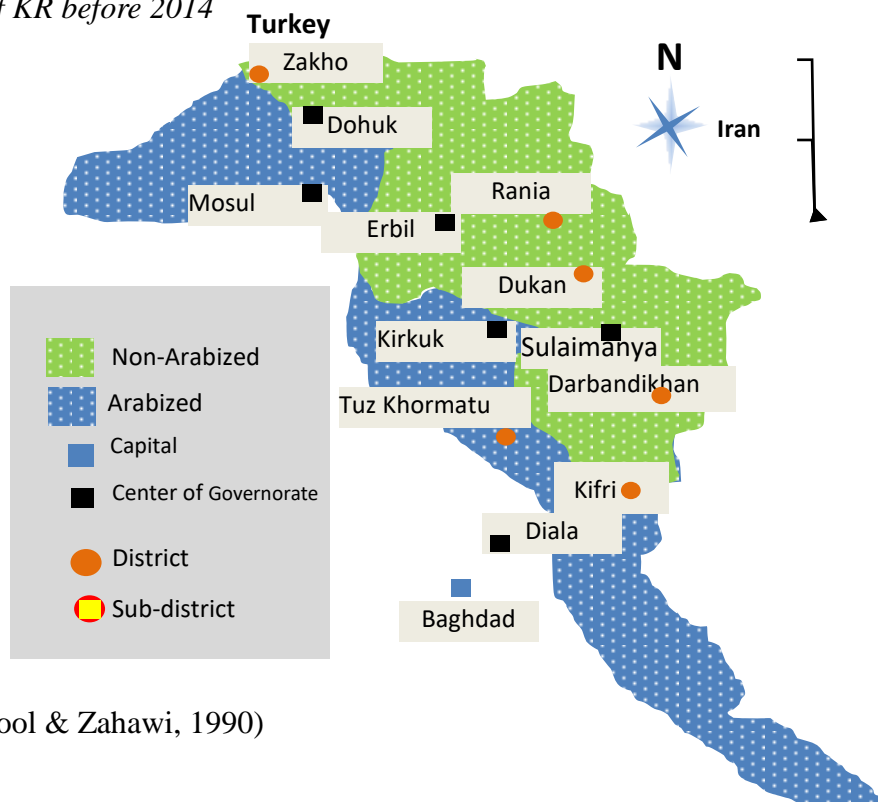
<sup>19</sup> District of the Erbil governorate (unit-case study)

<sup>20</sup> In this video, Saddam Hussein was talking about the people of Mergasur

### 2.5.5.1 Arabization and deportation campaign

For a long period of time in Iraq there was a replacement of people based on their ethnic background; however, it was not as extensive as in Saddam Hussein's era (Muhammed K. I., 2011). A new policy, which is called “Arabization”, was a plan in order to strengthen government control over valuable oil resources and arable land in northern Iraq (H.R.W., 2004). Arabization as a concept is transferring a foreign word to an Arabic word (Al-Shbiel, 2017, p. 470). However, this is well developed and became a growing part of the Arabs’ ideology within the other nations, via culture, religion and linguistic aspects in a region. This process has been implemented in two forms in Iraq. In its first form, it consisted of bringing Arab families to the Kurdish area. The second form was pushing of Kurdish families to other areas and settling Arab families in their places. For example, this happened in the cities of Mosul, Kirkuk, and Dyale (Muhammed, Omar, Kakayi, & Haji, 2003, p. 6). In the governorate of Mosul, this substitution of the nation happened many times (see Fig-7, Tab-7). Each time, it severely affected the demographics and many people lost their property. As a part of the Arabization, in parallel with bringing the Arab families, deportation of the Kurds was applied in Iraq (H.R.W, On Vulnerable Ground, 2009). From 1975-1988 the Iraqi government deported 4,314 families in Mosul (Resool & Zahawi, 1990, p. 190), which made the Arabs in the rural areas the majority in this governorate.

Figure 7- Arabized zones of KR before 2014



Source: Adopted from (Resool & Zahawi, 1990)

Table 7- Population of the Governorate of Mosul according to ethnic categories

| Year | Arab | Kurd | K/A <sup>21</sup> |
|------|------|------|-------------------|
| 1957 | 56.1 | 30.7 | 55%               |
| 1965 | 58.7 | 25.1 | 43%               |
| 1977 | 85.4 | 13.4 | 16%               |

Source (Muhammed, Omar, Kakayi, & Haji, 2003, p. 26)

In Kirkuk, the same strategy was applied (see Tab-8). Table Seven shows very clearly that the ratio of the Arabs as a nation has increased in contrast to the other ethnic groups (Kurds and Turkmen) from 40% to 82% within 20 years.

Table 8-The population of Kirkuk according to the ethnics

| Year | Arab | Kurd | Turkmen | A/K+T <sup>22</sup> |
|------|------|------|---------|---------------------|
| 1957 | 28.2 | 48.3 | 21.4    | 40%                 |
| 1965 | 39   | 36.1 | 19.5    | 70%                 |
| 1977 | 44.1 | 37.6 | 16.3    | 82%                 |

Source (Muhammed, Omar, Kakayi, & Haji, 2003, p. 135)

### 2.5.5.1 The Anfal campaign and chemical gas attack

#### 1. The Anfal campaign

Saddam Hussein's regime did not comprise only of the Arabization operation; but operated another campaign in the name of Anfal. Anfal means in the Arabic language "spoils when someone plunders someone after the battle" (K.S.U.edu, Al-Anfaal, 2016). In the KR, Anfal was begun in February until the end of September 1988 (H.R.W, Genocide in Iraq, 1990). It was a genocide<sup>23</sup> campaign by the Iraqi army against the Kurdish people (McDOWALL, 2007, p. 368). In the start-up of the operation, close to 3,653 villages and small towns were demolished (Muhammed K. I., 2011, p239-252) (see Fig-8). This amount reached 4,000 villages by the end of 1988 (H.R.W, The 1988 Anfal Campaign, 2004). Furthermore, Anfal was an operation of forced deportation, mass imprisonment and mass killing of the civilians (Muir, 2007) (see Pic-1). The people who were taken of them men, women, and children from the rural areas in KR didn't return

<sup>21</sup> Decreasing the Kurdish ethnic proportion versus the Arabian ethnic in the Mosel governorate

<sup>22</sup> Increasing the Arabian ethnic versus the Kurdish and Turkmen ethnics in the Kirkuk governorate

<sup>23</sup> The deliberate killing of the large group of people ,especially those of a particular nation or ethnic group (Oxford Dictionary<sup>23</sup> of English)

alive (H.R.W, Genocide in Iraq The Anfal Campaign Against the Kurds, 1993) (see Fig-9). In this operation about 180,000-182,000 people were killed (Saleh, 2006).

This campaign has resulted two main outcomes:

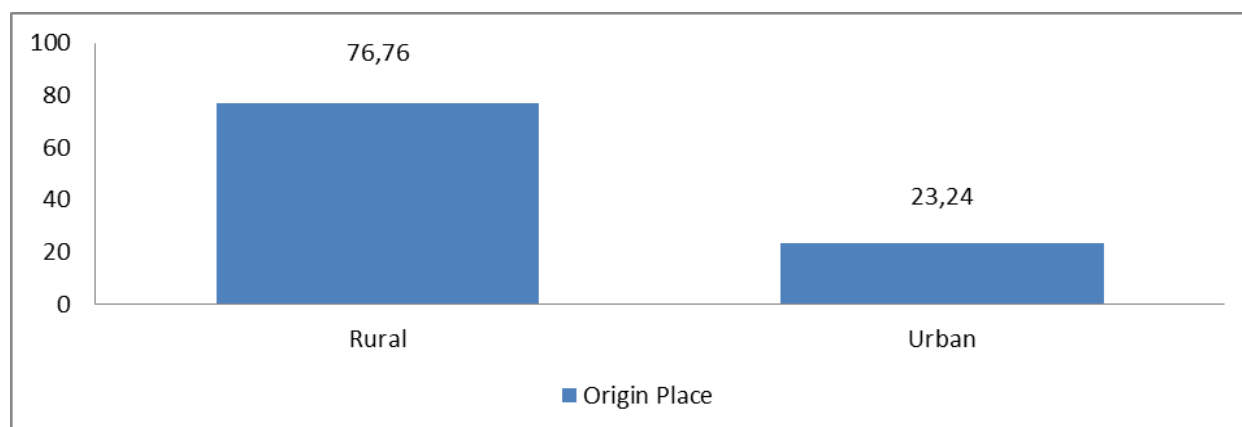
1. It completely destroyed the rural infrastructure, which included houses, 271 hospitals, 1757 schools, farms, 2457 mosques; as well as the water resources during this time (Korn, 1990). Additionally, social networks were cut and a panic and self-instability among the people was prevalent.
2. The second point is that about 219,828 families were forcibly deported to other places and more than 180,000 people were murdered (Resool & Zahawi, 1990, p. 3; H.R.W, Genocide in Iraq, 1990), which caused a rapid growth in population density in the cities that received these people.

*Picture 1- The remains of the corpses from the Anfal campaign*



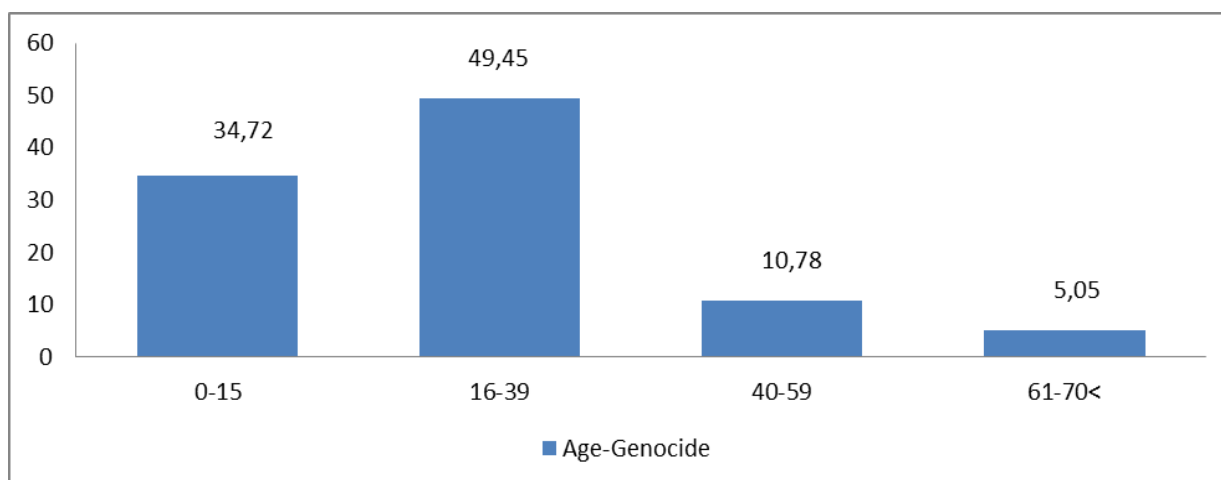
Source: (Othman, 2012)

*Figure 8- The destructed areas in the KR in the Anfal operations*



Source (MoMAA, 2008)

Figure 9- The victims by ages, who have been killed, in the Anfal operationes

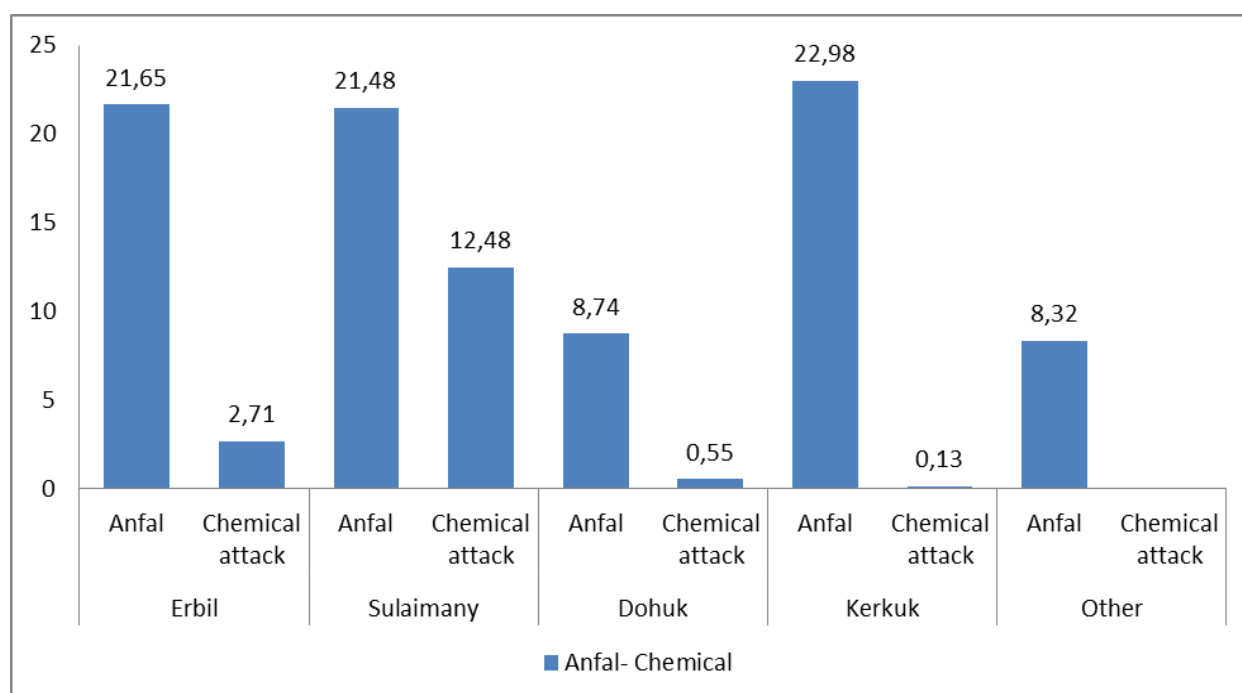


Source: (MoMAA, 2008)

## 2. The chemical attack campaign

Following the Anfal operations, on March 16, 1988, the Iraqi army attacked Halabja<sup>24</sup> with chemical gases of mustard, nerve and cyanide (Department, 2013), which killed about 5,000 civilians (McDowall, 2007, p. 358). In this number, 75% were children, women, and the elderly (BBC N.-4., 1988). Aside from Halabja, other areas were also chemically attacked in Erbil and Sulaimanya (see Fig-10).

Figure 10-The damaged places from Anfal and the chemical attacks per location



Source: (MoMAA, 2008)

<sup>24</sup> A new city belongs to the Kurdistan region, is located in the eastern-south of Sulaimanya

### **2.5.6 The Kurdistan Region After the Saddam Hussein's Era 1991-2014**

Injustice, forced deportation, and mass murder reached an unacceptable level in the KR. On 5, March 1991, people rose up against the regime (Rasul, 1994). In response to this procedure, the regime attacked the liberated cities (Erbil, Sulaimanya, Dohuk and Kirkuk) to get them back, which caused millions of people to migrate to the borders of Iran and Turkey and become refugees and 6,700 of these refugees died there (Miller, 1991; Section, 2003; Wayman, 2016). As a quick solution, the United Nations (UN) decided on a no-fly zone and pressed the Iraqi government to return and withdraw its army the line 36<sup>0</sup>. The no-fly zone became a security line in northern Iraq in which the KR is located (M.Gunter, 2004).

The KR ruled itself on one side until 2003. After the fall of Saddam's regime in 2003, the KR participated in the national Iraqi partnership government for re-constituting. The new constitution turned the Iraqi system into federal states, and KR officially became a federal region in Iraq. And this region has officially announced it to be the Kurdistan Region under the authority of the Kurdistan Region Government (KRG). In addition, the two languages of Arabic and Kurdish became the official languages in Iraq.

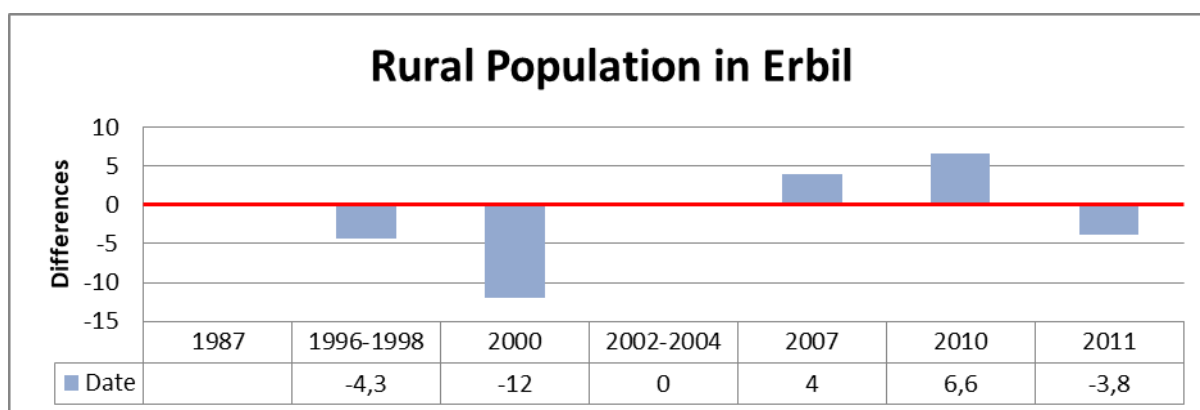
This stage provided more independence to the KRG to have contact with the central government in Baghdad and other countries. The KRG has taken a strategy for enhancing the investment, opened many doors to foreign and domestic investors, and has reformed its own investment legislations. On 4 July, 2006, the KRG declared a new investment law to support and protect the investors (Government K. R., 2006). This included several generous points in the new law, such as forgiveness for a ten-year tax and substantial reductions in many resources such as land and electricity. This resonated very well and attracted many investors to the region bringing about rapid economic development. This economic jump has negatively affected rural human resources (Soylemez, 2013, p. 7), especially for young ages. Most of the younger population have moved to the economically booming cities, as they have a better opportunity and a better income (Rudaw, 2015).

## **2.6 Conclusion**

Migrations in the KR have taken several forms. They were fluctuating from year to year. For example, in the Erbil governorate the rural-urban population rate was not stable. The reasons of these migrations were described between the periods 1987-1991; however, after 1991, this movement continued (see Tab-1 and Fig-11).



Figure 11- Rural Population Difference in Erbil



Source: Author's own construct (2017)

Similarly, the types of migration in the KR can be seen in Figure-11 as well. In the KR, there were two patterns of migration in the rural areas (see Tab-9). The first was forced migration and this was the extreme form. The second was migration for income improvement.

From the years 1532 to 1957, the motivation that pushed or pulled the villagers to migrate were for achieving human needs, and specifically for escaping from poverty in a case where the arable land was the main source of life and a source of nutrition and financial income. These motives caused a forced internal migration. However, this process was reversed after year 1958, when the government redistributed the lands to the villagers again, and the villagers returned.

From the years 1963 to 1990, the forced internal and external migrations occurred (see Tab-9). Both of the operations of Arabization and Anfal campaigns with the chemical attacks brought massive damages to the rural infrastructure and killed a mass numbers of villagers.

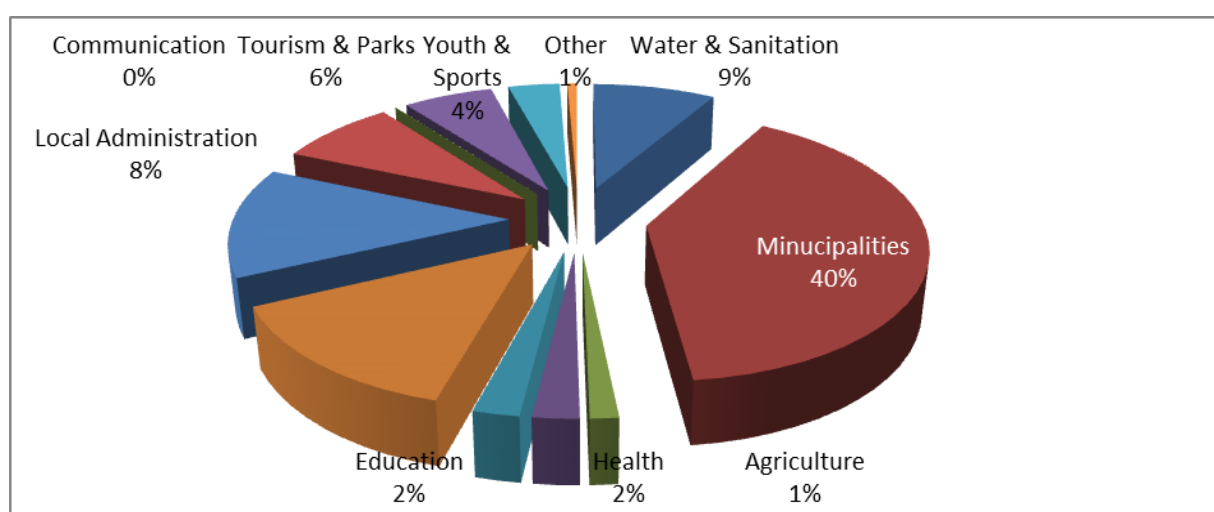
Table 9-Migrations in the KR

| Form                     | Period                |                       |                          |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
|--------------------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|--------------------------|--|--|--|--|--|--|--|
|                          | Migrated<br>1532-1917 | Migrated<br>1918-1957 | Re-migrated<br>1958-1962 | Migrated<br>1963-1986                                      | Migrated<br>1987-1990                                      | Re-migrated<br>1991-1995   | Migrated<br>1996-2000                        | Re-migrated<br>2001-2010                     | Migrated<br>2011                             |  |
| <b>Type</b>              | Need                  | Need                  | Need                     | Need   | Need   | Want   | Want   | Want   | Want   |  |
|                          | Forced                | Forced                | Volunteer                | Forced   | Forced   | Volunteer  | Volunteer                                    | Volunteer                                    | Volunteer                                    |  |
|                          | Internal&<br>External | Internal              | Internal                 | Internal&<br>External                                      | Internal&<br>External                                      | Internal   | Internal                                     | Internal                                     | Internal                                     |  |
|                          | Temporary             | Temporary             | Temporary                | Temporary  | Temporary  | Permanent  | Permanent                                    | Temporary                                    | Temporary                                    |  |
| <b>Level</b>             | Macro                 | Macro                 | Macro                    | Micro  | Micro  | Micro  | Macro  | Micro  | Micro  |  |
|                          | Meso                  | Meso                  | Micro                    | Meso   | Meso   | Macro  | Micro  | Meso   | Meso   |  |
|                          | Micro                 | Micro                 | Meso                     | Macro  | Macro  | Meso   | Meso   | Macro  | Macro  |  |
| <b>Main cause</b>        | Land<br>allocation    | Land<br>allocation    | land re-<br>allocation   | Arabization<br>Deportation<br>Mass<br>murder<br>evacuation | Arabization<br>Deportation<br>Mass<br>murder<br>evacuation | Income,<br>security<br>and<br>subsidized<br>by the UN<br>and<br>NGOs | Better<br>opportunity<br>& income<br>raising | Better<br>opportunity<br>& income<br>raising | Better<br>opportunity<br>& income<br>raising |  |
|                          | All ages &<br>gender  | All ages &<br>gender  | All ages &<br>gender     | All ages &<br>gender                                       | All ages &<br>gender                                       | All ages &<br>gender   | More Adult<br>male                           | All ages &<br>gender                         | All ages &<br>gender                         |  |
| <b>Migrant's segment</b> | All ages &<br>gender  | All ages &<br>gender  | All ages &<br>gender     | All ages &<br>gender                                       | All ages &<br>gender                                       | All ages &<br>gender   | More Adult<br>male                           | All ages &<br>gender                         | All ages &<br>gender                         |  |

Source: Author's own construct (2016)

However, the second form of migration in the rural areas of the KR was caused by the push-pull driver factors, and particularly the imbalance of income between the places of origin and destination. After the investment law was reformulated, the region was divided into two areas of more developed and less developed. The cities (Erbil, Sulaymania, and Dohuk) had more chances for receiving investment. For example, from 2004 to 2012, of the Erbil government budget, which was 3,885,665,398 USD, only 1% has been spent for agriculture sector (Raniaiy, 2016) (see Fig-12).

Figure 12- Allocation of the Erbil Governorate budget from 2004 to 2012



Source: (Raniaiy, 2016)

These investment projects affected the ability of the local labor market and have offered a great opportunity to rural workers. However, rural workers were losing money and some of them left their projects and became jobless, because there was a weak interest by the investors in the agriculture sector, including both government and private investors.

Generally, the two patterns of migration in the rural areas of the KR fluctuated from year to year. From 1991 to 1996, this period can be called the Golden Age. People and particularly the villagers came out of the regime's threat, and they could return to their homeland. However, there is no accurate data of the rural to urban shares between years 1992 to 1996. However, between 1996 and 1998, in the Governorate of Erbil, the rural-urban population rate declined and this decrease became sharper in 2000 (see Tab-10). From 2000 to 2004, there was a kind of stability in migration. Conversely, from 2007 and 2010, re-migration occurred with a ratio of 6.6%. Nevertheless, after 2003 and specifically after 2006, better income in the developed cities caused a new internal rural-urban migration. In the following years, from 2007 to 2010, there was a significant reverse migration, but this should have been increased after the announcement of the

Strategic Agricultural Plan in 2009. However, what has been seen is that the rural-urban migration has increased again.

*Table 10-Rural to urban ratio in the Erbil Governorate*

| Date       | R/U <sup>25</sup> | Population | P. ch. in r. <sup>26</sup> | Rural population | Referenced by                            |
|------------|-------------------|------------|----------------------------|------------------|--|
| 1987       | 37/63             | 1.506.147  |                            | 557.274          | (Province, 2008)                         |
| 1992- 1996 |                   |            | No data                    |                  |  |
| 1996-1998  | 32.7/67.2         | 1.544.767  | -11.6                      | 505.138          | (Stansfield, 2001, p. 77)                |
| 2000       | 20/80             | 1.584.377  | -38.8                      | 316.875          | (F.A.O., Rural Population, 2000)         |
| 2002-2004  | 20/80             | 1.623.986  | 0.0                        | 324.797          | (Province, 2008)                         |
| 2007       | 24/76             | 1.664.585  | 20.0                       | 399.500          | (I.A.U, Erbil Governorate Profile, 2010) |
| 2010       | 30.6/69.4         | 1.706.199  | 27.5                       | 511.859          | (Statistic KRG, 2010)                    |
| 2011       | 26.8/83.2         | 1.748.853  | -12.4                      | 468.692          | (J.A.U, 2013)                            |

*Source: Author's own construct (2017)*

For Table-10 above, I made a big effort to prepare it. I used different data sources were used because there were and are not accurate censuses and data. Table-10 is similar to Table-1, but expanded with an addition of the population change in the rural area of the Erbil governorate.

<sup>25</sup> Rural to urban ratio

<sup>26</sup> Population change in the rural area of the rural areas of the Erbil governorate

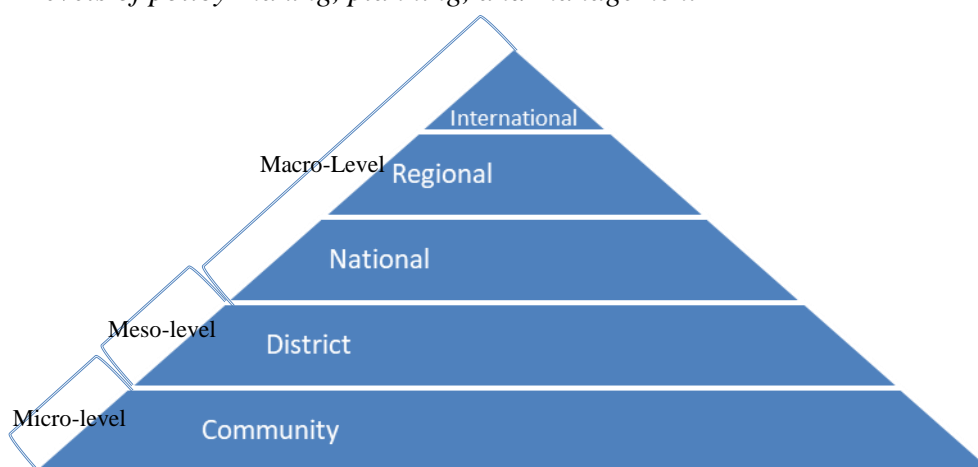
## **CHAPTER THREE: CONCEPTS AND THEORIES OF POLICY, POLICY-MAKING AND RURAL SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT**

### **3.1 Entrance to Public Policy and Policy-making**

Public policy is a political decision or a governmental function that is consistent with the stated objectives for a certain period (Keeley, 2001, p. 5). In addition, it is a framework, which obliges administration and staff to perform their assigned duties in parallel with the government's strategy, it is formulated to provide the best service for the entire population within a country or a limited group of people (Dukeshire & Thurlow, 2002; Mayer & Thmpson, 1982). Public policy has been specified by the United Kingdom's Department for International Development (DFID) as “*a course of action designed to achieve a particular goal or goals*” (Karl, Participatory Policy Reform from a Sustainable Livelihoods Perspective, 2002, p.4), and it is a “*public interest or public good as expressed in principles that guide the interpretation and enforcement of the law*” (Heritage A. , 2016). Thus, it facilitates the process of translating the laws to be more applicable to real life, and to reach the people for whom this has been planned.

Policy is a planning tool, which simultaneously collaborates with three levels, specifically micro, meso and macro, to prevent any kind of target gap (Karl, Participatory Policy Reform from a Sustainable Livelihoods Perspective, 2002, p.3; Sen, 2001, p. 86) (see Fig-13).

*Figure 13- Levels of policy-making, planning, and management*



*Source: Adopted from (Sen, 2001)*

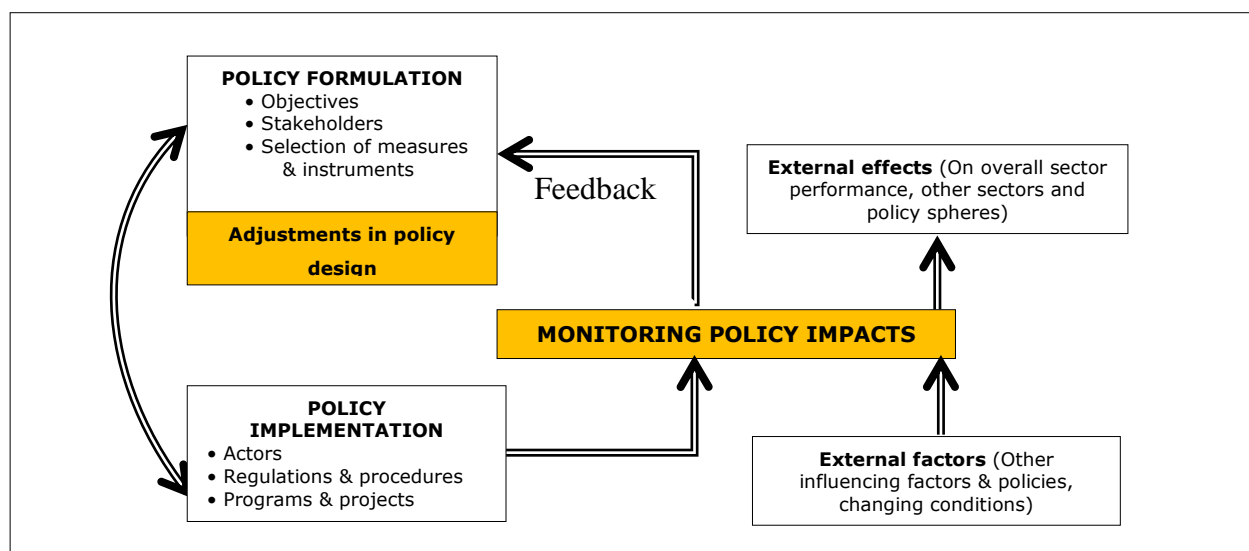
Policy is formulated in a systematic process called policy-making. Policy-making is a series of

actions or steps taken in order to achieve a particular end, which is to ensure that government services have reached people. This process is a tool for a particular political system (Uraivan, 1984, p. 3), as the political system is “*a system of behaviour characterized by authoritative decisions which are accepted as legitimate and binding and it exists wherever authoritative allocations of values affecting the public life of citizens are made*” (Byron, 1969).

However, in isolation policy-making is inoperative and thus must be tested in a context as a part of the process (Karl, Participatory policy from a Sustainable Livelihoods Perspective, 2002, p.2). This process must be passed through several stages to be complete (Keeley, 2001, p. 5). The F.A.O constructed a significant framework to track policy and its performance (see Fig-14) (Metz & GTZ, 2005, p. 23). This mechanism is used in policy-making capacity development for food, agriculture, and rural development.

1. Formulating: This involves information gathering, analysis, and decision-making.
2. Implementing: This involves a set of rules, regulations, and institutions to achieve the goals of the policy.
3. Monitoring and evaluating: These follow the actions of the formulation and implementation of policy.

*Figure 14-The role of Monitoring Policy Impacts (MPI) in the process of policy formulation and implementation*



Source: (Metz & GTZ, 2005, p. 3)

Regarding this scheme, policy-making is an issue that affects and depends on internal and external factors (Metz & GTZ, 2005, p. 16). The internal factors are the factors that act within the organization to frame or refer to the individuals and parties, within the organization (Surbhi S. b., 2015). The external factors refer to these parties who have influence on the policy-making process, and can be a person or an entity (Surbhi S. b., 2015). In this respect, policy-making is a

process that comprises a number of players, in which each one acts within a certain task (Sen, 2001, p. 85). These players are called stakeholders, they are those who may be affected by or have an effect on an effort or project (Rabinowitz, 2017). To further elaborate about stakeholders, Dalal-Clayton and Dent, & Dubois identify them as:

*“They are likely to include special interest groups within rural communities, private operators and both central and local government as primary stakeholders (directly affected by the project) with other stakeholders such as non-governmental organizations NGOs”* (Dalal-Clayton, Dent, & Dubois, Rural Planning in Developing countries, 2003, p. 16).

In policy-making, the stakeholders are those people who are committed to serving the organization as board members, staff, volunteers, and donors. They can be in the private sector, which includes the profit-oriented organizations. Alternatively, they can be civil society organizations including those that are only people-oriented. The active persons among these stakeholders, who are in direct touch with people, are called the actors. The actors are considered policy implementers. They are formulating and operating policy in different ways alongside with the governmental institutions. The government permanently functions in a long-term financial and personal commitment; however, the other parties are functioning within the rest of the task based on their goals (see Tab-11).

*Table 11-Comparisons of organizations in different sectors*

| Characteristic                           | Sectors               |                               |                                   |
|--|-----------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
|  | Government            | Business                      | Voluntary                         |
| Relationship to those served             | Mutual obligation     | Financial transaction         | Personal commitment               |
| Duration of relationship to those served | Permanent             | Momentary                     | Temporary                         |
| Approach to external environment         | Control and authority | Conditioning and isolation    | Negotiation and integration       |
| Resources from                           | Citizens              | Customers                     | Donors                            |
| Feedback on performance                  | (in) direct politics  | Direct from market indicators | “constructed” from multiple users |

Source: (Fowler, 1997, pp. 20-27)

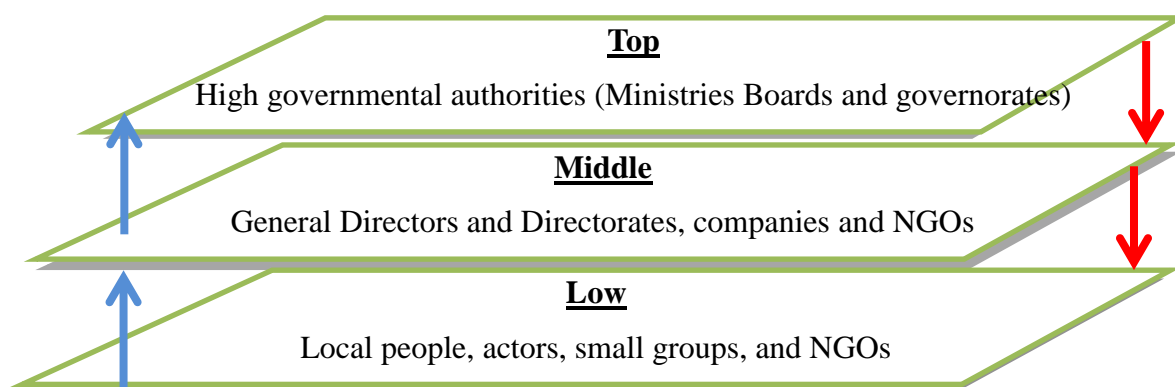
In the rural areas, there are three main parties who have a major task in the development

programs: public sector and government, private sector, and civil society organizations and NGOs. These are elaborated in the following paragraphs.

### 1. *Public sector and government*

In a general form, most internal stakeholders who are involved in policy-making for micro or meso or macro levels are public, private and civil society (Development, 2017). They are in continuous connection, and they are bargaining and sometimes are in strong opposition (Pearce & Eade, 2004, p. 46). However, the public sector has a very significant role to engage the other partners (Primavera, 2005). It is more authorized and has more responsibilities; while the other partners complement the government's mission. This pioneer-like role occupies the top and the middle layers so that people are connected (see Fig-15). At the top level, rules and laws are made, as well as policy. In addition, the public sector is “*encompassing three sectors, the general government sector, public financial and nonfinancial sector*” (AEG, 2005). Another definition of government is “*the group of people who officially control a country*” (Woodford, 2007). This group has sufficient authority on the public and governmental bodies and refers to all branches of government, including the executive, judicial, administrative and regulatory activities of federal, state, local, or regional political entities” (K.Anheier, Helmut, A.List, & Regina, 2005; Pitzer, 2005, p. 2). It is headed by a person, who is called president, and he or she is “*a person who governs a country at a particular time, or a period of government*” (Woodford, 2007).

Figure 15- Participation of Main Parties in Sustainable Development Programs



Source: Author's own construct (2016)

Public administration is distinguished from the other administrations such as business administration; in addition, it differs from the other private and civilian organizations. This is because it coordinates and brings together the efforts to implement policies for achieving the established goals. Leonardo White states that “*the public administration includes all operations aimed at the implementation of public policy*” (White, 1926, pp. 2-3). Moreover, it also translates



policies to meet public services.

## 2. *Private Sector*

While the public administration plays a major role in country administration, it has often faced several difficulties and obstacles during its mission. In considering collaboration amongst actors or new space for other parties, such as the private sector has been made in the process for policy-making. Today the private sector is a development agent and no longer a tool (State, 2017). It can drive the market more actively, and it can construct a wider space of income generators (Beccio, Chalasani, Vega, Millinga, Shen, & Slezic, 2007, p. 2). The private sector contains foreign or local organization, which conducts a regular business for a profit. It is defined as a “*part of the national economy that is not under direct state control*” (Dictionary C. C., 2006).

In rural areas, the private sector includes agents that can be involved in rural projects such as subsistence or smallholder farmers; rural wage earners, livestock herders, small-scale traders and micro-entrepreneurs (I.F.A.D, 2007, p. 4). Moreover, it includes the input suppliers, microfinance institutions, transporters, agro-processors, commodity brokers and traders; and also includes other, bigger market players that may or may not reside in rural areas, including local or international commodity buyers and sellers, multinational seed or fertilizer companies, commercial banks, agribusiness firms and supermarkets (I.F.A.D, 2007, p. 4). Additionally, the farmers’ associations, herders, water users or traders also constitute an important part of the private sector (I.F.A.D, 2007). On the other hand, there are some other groups that can be included in the private sector such as farmers, dealers, distributors, and retailers, non-governmental and community-based organizations, support service providers, pre-urban agriculture, participants in out-grower schemes, and contract farming and entities providing input and output marketing services (Vries, H.Sally, & Inocencio, 2005).

## 3. *Civil society organizations and NGOs*

Civil society organizations are the third active party (D.P.I, 2009), which differs from the public and private organizations. They are characterized by a small size of human capital with limited capacity; however, they are a part of the civil society (K.Anheier & A.List, 2006, p. 54). They are considered a bridge among people, public and private institutions especially at a national and regional level, which covers the macro and meso levels (A.U.G.U.R, 2012). Internationally, the civil society organizations have played an important role in assisting global development (Bank T. W., 2013). They can be structured in many forms (see Tab-12), but they are characterized by three criteria, which are private non-profit distributing, self-governing, and voluntary organizations

(A.U.G.U.R, 2012, p. 7). The World Bank formulated a definition, stating “*the civil society refers to the wide array of non-governmental and not-for-profit organizations that have a presence in public life, expressing the interests and values of their members or others, based on ethical, cultural, political, scientific, religious or philanthropic considerations*” (Bank T. W., 2013).

Table 12-Developing a list of concepts

|                    | Philanthropy         | Civil Society  | Non-profit Org.           | Non-governmental Org.           |
|--------------------|----------------------|----------------|---------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Key concepts       | Foundation           | Social capital | Non-profit management     | Social entrepreneurship         |
| Major concepts     | Operating foundation | Human rights   | Public goods              | Solidarity                      |
| Technical Concepts | Pay-out rate         | Global Compact | Unrelated business income | Overseas development assistance |

Source: (K.Anheier & A.List, 2006, p. xii)

In this study, NGOs consider the most relevant institutions for rural areas, as they are moving the sustainable development programs and plans forward, and have a better connection with people (Dhakal, 2002; Nikkhah & Redzuan, 2010; K.Anheier & A.List, 2006, p. xii; Primavera, 2005). Nonetheless, they are also a good party to develop the economy by creating jobs and generating income (Nikkhah & Redzuan, 2010, p. 90). Moreover, they are restricted in their activities in the context of social and welfare services (Dhakal, 2002), and can be easily used by both micro and macro level (Dhakal, 2002). The NGOs are those organizations or private associations that are acting freely in parallel with government and other sectors. They are a group of institutions that can ease the burden on the government by supplementing, complementing and advocating (Young, 2000, p. 165), thus they can act:

1. Supplementarily with voluntary organizations providing the uncovered welfare services by the state (Young, 2000, p. 165)
2. Complementarily with contracts and partnerships between government and non-profit agencies in response to new public management and out-sourcing
3. Adversarial with groups who are advocating the rights of needy people left unserved and underserved by the state (K.Anheier, Helmut, A.List, & Regina, 2005).

## 3.2 Policy-making Approaches

Since policy-making is a complex process (Phuhlisani, 2009, p. 13), it should be organized in such a way as to be able to achieve a particular objective or objectives. The three stages of policy, formulation, implementation and monitoring, can be arranged among the contributors for a certain outcome (Phuhlisani, 2009, p. 3; Matland, 1995, p. 149). This includes government, private sector, and NGOs (Phuhlisani, 2009, p. 13).

Policy-making can be formulated and implemented through several approaches (Matland, 1995, p. 146); these approaches are top-down, bottom-up and meso combined.

### 3.2.1 Top-down Approach

In this approach, the government is the sole decision-maker and ruler, whereby power and space are centered in the governmental pole (Shah, 2006, p. 21; Pipeline, 2013). These kinds of policies are imposed and implemented strictly on the ground. They cannot promote equity in the distribution of assets among people and lack integration (O.E.C.D, 2005). Therefore, this model has been criticized that it could not meet three important points (Matland, 1995, p. 147):

1. It takes the statutory language as a starting point, which fails to consider the significance of actions taken earlier in the policy-making process.
2. It is accused of seeing implementation as a purely administrative process and either ignores the political aspects or tries to eliminate them (Berman, 1978)
3. It has exclusive emphasis on the statute frame for the key actors.

Despite its disadvantages, the top-down approach has some advantages such as:

1. It makes policy goals clear and consistent (Van Meter & Van Horn, 1975)
2. It minimizes the number of actors (Pressman & Wildavsky, 1973)
3. It limits the extent of change necessary (Van Meter & Van Horn, 1975)
4. It places responsibility on the agency with the appropriate policy goals (Van Meter & Van Horn, 1975)

### 3.2.2 Bottom-up Approach

After the top-down failed in many cases and was criticised in attempting to solve several issues at micro-level (Berman, 1978), a new approach emerged. The governmental management turned into a bottom-up pattern. This model was more focused on the micro-level. The procedure of this approach has differed from the top-down. It formulates its policy from the people themselves and links to the government's strategy; while the top-down, in contract, delivered policy from the top level without respecting people's decisions. This model could succeed in reducing poverty in rural areas and increasing the knowledge of the local people (Phiri, 2009). It is more concentrated on social cohesion and provides more transparency in rural development programs (LEADER, 1997).

Nonetheless, in this model, the government has an indirect role. However, the other parties play a more powerful role and occupy the government position (Matland, 1995, p. 148). With all these advantages this model is not perfect, and has been criticised on two points:

- a. Normatively: it could not provide a democratic system between the elected representatives, who have been elected by people at the high governmental level, and the local people (Matland, 1995, p. 149).
- b. Methodologically: it created a kind of autonomy for the local people (Matland, 1995, p. 150). Moreover, it pushed people to be far from the government goals.

### 3.2.3 Meso-level Approach

Neither of the above models was perfect in their separate use. Both have several advantages and disadvantages. Therefore, for a long time, this was a prominent issue and divided researchers into two sides until the creation of a new pattern (Matland, 1995, p. 150). Meso-level policy-making was the idea of combining of the two approaches. This pattern for the first time was presented by Elmore (1982-1985). In this pattern, the new model is argued to provide a new perspective that can take into account the requirements of the local people on the one hand, and respect the government's strategy on the other hand. Based on this concept, policy can be able to play its role within the two layers of the micro-level and macro-level (Matland, 1995, p. 151). Additionally, this model covers a range from the community to the national level, including "*Region*" (Mayer-Rühen, Bartels, Urban, Schmidt-Kallert, & others, 1999, p. 4). Through this model, key stakeholders in the community, government sectors and institutions meet with each other and share, shape, and decide in the same frame to achieve the same goal or goals. Moreover, they are distributioning the power and the space among each other in the end.

With this approach, rural development programs have recorded many successes in many countries such as in Bolivia, India, Philippines, Kenya, Sri-Lanka, Guatemala, Argentina, South Africa and Russia (Mayer-Rühen, Bartels, Urban, Schmidt-Kallert, & others, 1999, pp. 6-12-32). In addition, this approach became the main key element of regional rural development (Mayer-Rühen, Bartels, Urban, Schmidt-Kallert, & others, 1999, p. 6), specifically with the issues such as:

1. Regional development planning
2. Planning competence and decentralization
3. Integrating rural-urban area functions
4. Implementing regional development
5. Land use planning
6. Securing rights of access to land and land ownership
7. Natural resources management

### **3.3 Rural Governance and Rural Sustainable Development**

The former section explained the necessity of participation in decision-making and sharing the power and space among the people and the other sectors in parallel with governmental institutions. However, it is crucial to give an explanation of some of these concepts and elements that relate to this approach.

#### **3.3.1 Governance and Good Governance**

Long debates have been conducted among researchers about sharing and redistributing power and space from government to the people (Kemp, Parto, & Gibson, 2005, p. 13). In 1980, a number of concepts were introduced to perform this mission and change the direction of the planning system. One of these was governance, which has been linked to sustainability programs (Kemp, Parto, & Gibson, 2005, p. 13). Governance is the process of decision-making, and the process by which decisions are implemented or not implemented (Nations, 2009). It is a model of sharing power and space of different groups between governmental institutions and citizens, as well as every group of people who do not belong to government institutions, such as private sector and civic associations and local people (Cheema & A., 2007, p. 1). Regardless of whether the central government inhibits or promotes economic growth and social development (Cheema & A., 2007, p. 1), however, this task will be reallocated among these groups. There are three scenarios of people's involvement. People can participate at the micro, meso, or macro levels. As the participation means "*a process through which stakeholders influence and share control*" (Bank W., World Bank Participation Sourcebook, 1995). These groups are divided into three blocks. The first two parties are beneficiaries such as the local and social community, who include the micro-level and meso-level, and the third party is the political entities, which is at the macro-level (Gaventa & Valderrama, 1999, p. 2).

Thus, governance can be expressed as a re-structuring of centralized government to decentralized governance. With this new system, planning and management enhances an expansion from the central administration by the government to working groups in order to involve other institutions. Moreover, governance is a kind of shifting of some direction in the planning process, such as shifting from select individuals to general citizens, projects to policy, consultation to decision-making, appraisal to implementation, and also connects the micro-level to macro-level (see Tab-13).

Table 13-Shift in participation

| From         | To              |
|--------------|-----------------|
| Beneficiary  | Citizen         |
| Project      | Policy          |
| Consultation | Decision-making |
| Appraisal    | Implementation  |
| Micro        | Macro           |

Sources: (Gaventa & Valderrama, 1999, p. 5)

Like sustainability, governance can enhance factors to be more integrated, transparent, representative, accountable and connected via a wider participation of people in public decision-making; therefore, it is in complement to the sustainability concepts (Kemp, Parto, & Gibson, 2005, p. 17; Iftimoaei, 2015).

Governance can be analysed within both normative as well as descriptive dimensions (Iftimoaei, 2015), and like government institutions, can be good or bad (Cariño, p. 14). Good governance has been defined by the IFAD as “*the manner in which power is exercised in the management of a country’s economic and social resources for development*” (IFAD, 1999). From this respect, good governance has another output and it is decentralization (Cheema & A., 2007, p. 2).

Decentralisation is a process approach, which enhances development programs, and specifically in rural areas (Owusu, 2005; Cheema & A., 2007, p. 3). Goodwin explains decentralization, and states that it “*indicates a significant change in the processes by which rural society is governed and rural policy is delivered*” (Shucksmith, 2000, p.3). Hence, decentralisation can increase the participation rate of ordinary people as well as promote market and marketability, and can increase access to natural resources (Massuanganhe, 2008).

### 3.3.2 Rural Sustainable Development Program and Concept

When there is a policy to achieve a certain goal, this should be done via a proper program. Development programs are the best choice to revitalize people’s lives. Development can be explained based on its use and objective. It means a ‘*change*’ when someone or something grows or changes and becomes more advanced; and it means a ‘*creation*’ when something has been newly made such as the development of new drugs, design and innovation (Woodford, 2007).

Moreover, it means a 'start' when something begins or appears. It means '*building*' such as building a new house, factories, shops, etc. (Woodford, 2007). Thus, the development concept can be interpreted as a movement for something from one level to another upper level.

Rural development programs (RDPs) are other disciplines in planning for development. The idea of these programs was raised from the needs of rural areas going into the development process. Through these programs, planning was developed and implemented with a great focus on the three social, economic and environmental factors. However, these programs were very sectorial and tried through a sectorial perspective to manage their own agenda (Scoones, 2009). Most often they have been used via the agriculture, tourism, and industrial sectors (F.A.O.a, 2018) and were oriented macro-level.

Over the past three decades, these programs have shown many interesting results in different countries, such as raising the range of the individual income, or providing a better quality of live. For example, in rural India, these programs could empower the poor to have a better life within and outside farming, specifically by empowering 22 million women (Sennhauser, 2016; Porter, 2016). In rural areas of China, rural development programs have impacted an increase in incomes and have reduced poverty (O.E.C.D., OECD Rural Policy Reviews: China, 2009). Furthermore, in Brazil, between 1975 and 1987, these programs achieved abundant acceptable results through land tenure and credit for agricultural projects, and then improvement of the services in agricultural extension centers and better infrastructure to increase per capita income. (Group T. W., 2012).

Hence, the RDPs have reached their goals in covering a wide scope in rural areas, with the quality of people lives as the main aspect of this scope among others (C.S.D., 2018). Additionally, these programs play a great role in reducing poverty, improving equity, growing economy and enhancing competitiveness, providing more rights for participation and sustaining the environment and institutions (Agri.Info., 2015; Orientation, 2000, p. 5). Therefore, these programs are accounted for as processes, which enhance people's welfare by achieving their basic needs and saving people from poverty. In addition, these programs promote local people's well-being and encourage better land management in rural areas (Diakosavvas, 2006, p. 16).

Despite the advantages of the development programs, they have failed in some other missions (Anríquez & Stamoulis, 2007, p. 1). Without any boundary of use, the RDPs have led to a great waste of resources when the focus was on economic growth only (Elliott, 2006, S. 15). Nonetheless, these programs were not able to recognize the aspects of the social as well as environmental and ecological degradation and the other biophysical damages (Kemp, Parto, & Gibson, 2005, p. 13). After the environment sector faced many crises, such crises as biodiversity

loss, shrinking tropical forests, pollution, and global warming, the trend of the economists and planners shifted and brought another concept to be a complement to development (Bartelmus, 1994; R.Frank, Jr., & Webb, 1977, p. 1), which is called sustainability. Sustainability and development (SD) concepts are aimed at helping human communities to achieve a better life for present and future generations, and these concepts are concerned with practical distribution rather than growth (Wheeler, 2013, p. 126; R.Frank, Jr., & Webb, 1977, p. 1).

Sustainable development programs are an approach to pursue integration among social, economic and ecological considerations at all scales of macro, meso and micro levels (Kemp, Parto, & Gibson, 2005, p. 14; U.N., 2008, p. 1). In the social sector, these aim to promote people and communities in a manner to ensure justice and improve living and health conditions. In addition, their functions in the environmental sector are to protect natural patterns and resources. Nonetheless, these programs economically focus on the economic structures in parallel to maximize production and minimize waste.

Thus, sustainable development programs are *“the kind of developments that meet the needs of the present without compromising the ability of future generations to meet their own needs”* (WCED, 1987). Moreover, with more attention to other aspects, Defra (2004) defined it as:

*“Continuous economic and social progress that respects the limits of the Earth’s ecosystem, and meets the needs and aspirations of everyone for better quality of life, now and for future generations to come emphasising the need to better coordinate the social, economic and environmental dimensions of development”* (Gallent, Juntti, & Kidd, 2008, p. 17).

Based on the institutional structure, sustainable development has been defined by the IFAD as *“Ensuring that the institutions supported through projects and the benefits realized, [are] maintained and continue after the end of the project”* (Tango, 2009). Hence, sustainable development therefore has two areas to consider; and these are human and ecosystem.

### **3.4 Agricultural Sustainable Development in Rural Areas**

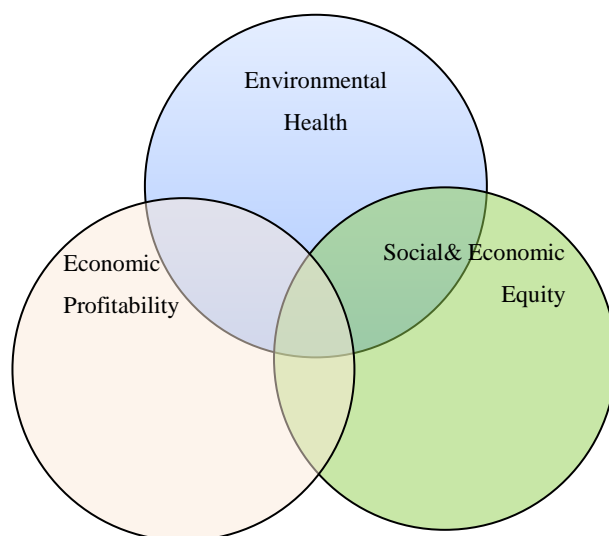
Before the industrial revolution, agriculture was a pioneer compared to the other sectors (Culture, 2016). In most countries, this sector was the first option for rural development, and was then followed by tourism and manufacturing. However, this sector remains the food basket provider and income generator, and has been a solution for poor developing countries to prevent poverty, notwithstanding the other sectors currently leading the global market (F.A.O., The WTO Negotiations on Agriculture, 2002; Byerlee, Diao, & Jackson, 2005, p. 51; Diakosavvas, 2006, p. 43). Moreover, this sector is the main resource for improving the villagers’ livelihood and driving



the economy (F.A.O., The WTO Negotiations on Agriculture, 2002; I.E.D, 2015).

Although there are perspectives of researchers who believe that rural development may differ from agriculture development, agricultural and rural developments are two sides of the same coin. Based on the principle of sustainable development, agriculture can raise its production to meet market demand without compromising the ability of next generations. It develops and remains inside a frame of respecting the social, economic and environmental aspects to guaranty the quality of life for the current and new generation (Gold, 2007) (see Fig-16).

*Figure 16-Agriculture sustainable development concepts*



*Source:* (Gold, 2007)

Agricultural sustainable development means an integrated system of plant and animal production practices having a site-specific application that works over the long term to (Gold, 2007):

1. Satisfy human food and fiber needs
2. Enhance environmental quality and the natural resource base upon which the agricultural economy depends
3. Make the most efficient use of non-renewable resources and on-farm resources and integrate, where appropriate, natural biological cycles and controls
4. Sustain the economic viability of farm operations
5. Enhance the quality of life for farmers and society as a whole.

This sector is a horizontal activity (Diakosavvas, 2006, p. 43). However, in a narrow regional perspective; it completes its vertical side with the other sectors in order to fill the needs of people. In addition, this sector provides the food basket and also supplies manufacturers that process food (Adelman, 1984).

The agricultural sector can play many roles in rural areas such as:

1. It is the main sector to secure the country's food security and safety, as well as energy (Abazaami, 2013, p. 16; Khanna & Solanki, 2014; Luda, 2012).
2. It uses a local labor force and reduces the unemployment rate; and then generates individual's income and increases government profitability (Borras & McKinley, 2006).
3. It is a sector that relies on local natural resources (Gold, 2007).
4. It supplies raw material for manufacturing or canning in industrial fields. Thus, it expands the circle of production (Rogers & Schmitz, 2011, p. 9; Congress, 1991, p. 34; Grinstein-Weiss & Curley, 2003).

Through the agricultural sector, the government is empowered to redistribute population density in rural areas (Gollin, Lagakos, & Waugh, 2012, p. 36).

### 3.5 Tourism and Sustainable Development in Rural Areas

Rural tourism dates back to the post-industrial revolution. At that time, the migrants were returning to their homes at their leisure (Eruera, 2008, p. 28). Tourism is a comprehensive channel for economic and social development, due to its impact for maximising income and its opportunities (Zorzoliu & Iatagan; Liu, 2006). In addition, it reduces the unemployment rate, and improves the income balance, and sometimes becomes a source of supplementary income, and influences poverty alleviation, which reduces migration as well (L.G. & Chandrashekara, 2014, p. 48; Okech, Haghiri, & George, 2012). This sector facilitates achievement of the goals of livelihoods (Mbaiwa, 2008). Moreover, tourism projects lead to improved infrastructure, electricity, potable water and have also created some seasonal jobs among some of the communities' residents (Nordbo, 2009). Last but not least; the sector contributes to improving the style and pattern of social and cultural life in society.

Rural tourism has been developed in many countries, such as in Canada in the cities of Alberta, Ontario, Québec, New Brunswick, Manitoba and Saskatchewan. Furthermore, this sector has developed in the USA, Australia, and the UK (Irshad, 2010, pp. 14-15). Nonetheless, the rural areas of India have another form of transformation in creating tourism places (L.G. & Chandrashekara, 2014). Another example is found in China, where rural tourism has become a driving force in the tourism sector in this country. According to the General Office of the State Council's vision, approximately 6,000 villages will be developed by 2020 (ChinaTravelNews, 2015). Thus, rural tourism can be defined as *“the country experience which encompasses a wide range of attractions and activities that take place in agricultural or non-urban areas”* (Irshad, 2010, p. 5).

Unlike the agricultural enterprises, the tourism sector operates with less input. However, not every place is considered a place for tourism; this place should have a special entity to attract

people to visit. Tourism infrastructure is related to several institutions and parties, such as institutions including governmental ministries and the private sector, as well as, civil societies. The private sector has a significant function in developing social infrastructure, while the environmental infrastructure is often the task of government institutions (Jovanovic & Ilic, 2016, p. 290). These institutions and parties together are performing to build a positive image of a place for attracting tourists. Additionally, these places should be prepared for by a good infrastructure, such as:

1. Good communication and transportation services (Jovanovic & Ilic, 2016, p. 289)
2. Places for accommodation including hotels, motels, and houses for rent (Jovanovic & Ilic, 2016, p. 289).
3. Efficient human capital for hospitality (Razzaqa, Mohamadb, & A.Kaderc, 2013).
4. Monetary and insurance services such as banking facilities, travel agencies, insurance agencies, and tourist guides (Jovanovic & Ilic, 2016, p. 290)
5. Cultural assessment such as culture, heritage, fairs and festivals, local art and music, dress and dance, language and food (Jovanovic & Ilic, 2016, p. 290)

People who are called tourists visit these places for certain purposes; such purposes may be environmental, industrial fields, agricultural or sacred religious. Thus, the tourism patterns are divided into:

1. Cultural tourism: Tourists intend during their visit to find out about historical remains or learn new things about a place.
2. Sports tourism: Tourists aim in their trip to participate in a sports activity or to watch an activity in this place.
3. Treatment tourism: These types of the tourists are looking for medical treatment.
4. Religious tourism: These types of tourists are, for example, clergymen who are believers in a particular religion.
5. Business tourism: These kinds of people are conducting their business or they are employees in a certain company, who are participating in a business activity, such as conference, scientific issue, or training.
6. Leisure tourism: These patterns of people have one purpose, which is entertainment in a particular place.

The tourism sector has numerous advantages, these advantages have been listed by Vaquerizo as follows (Vaquerizo, 2013):

1. Rural tourism obviously can create and retain jobs for the local people, specifically for the youth. It motivates retail, transportation, hospitality, medical care, and farming.
2. For countries with an ancient history and a deep culture, tourism can enhance the function of handicrafts.
3. It helps to preserve rural culture and heritage because when people understand that their culture and heritage are their sources of prosperity, they will try to preserve them.
4. From the income generated from tourism, people can maintain and develop their place.
5. It can change their lifestyle for the better.

Rather than its advantages, the tourism projects sometimes affect the agricultural projects

negatively (Mbaiwa, 2008). They influence human capital, wages, and culture negatively. For that reason, Eruera (2008) has listed a set of the advantages and disadvantages of rural tourism (see Tab-14).

*Table 14-Advantage and disadvantage of rural tourism development*

| Advantages                                  | Disadvantages                           |
|---|---|
| Employment with new jobs                    | Leakages <sup>27</sup>                  |
| Diversification of employment               | Low pay                                 |
| Diversification of products                 | Declining multiplier                    |
| New markets created by new products         | Imported labour                         |
| New businesses may be attracted to the area | Unbalanced income                       |
| Economic stabilization                      | Unbalanced employment distribution      |
| Higher economic multipliers                 | Dependency on tourism                   |
| Reduced out migration                       | Increased crime                         |
| Repopulation                                | Disrupt social structure and traditions |
| Social improvement                          | Changes in community culture            |
| Revitalization of crafts and customs        | Congestion and crowding                 |
| Enables the provision of infrastructure     | Loss of family time                     |

*Source: (Eruera, 2008, p. 30)*

## 3.6 Marketplace and its Perfection

### 3.6.1 Market and Marketing

For each project, there must be a certain place to exchange products and services to money, and to meet people's needs and wants (Moffatt, 2017; Saunders, Kotler, Armstrong, & Wong, 1999, p. 15). This transaction of exchanging is mainly made in the market and it depends on the market size and trend and marketing activity. Hence, market is *“that set of suppliers and demanders whose trading establishes the price of a good or service”* (AGSM, 1997). The market can also be *“a place where sellers of particular goods or services can meet with buyers of those goods and services, it creates a potential for a transaction to take place”* (Moffatt, 2017). These markets are those places that collect many different efforts by many parties and people who have direct or indirect affect, such as government institutions, private sector and non-governmental organizations (Moffatt, 2017; Nikkhah & Redzuan, 2010, p. 86). Moreover, the activities for

<sup>27</sup>

Page and Getz (1997, citing Butler & Clark, 1992) described numerous disadvantages that can occur as rural tourism develops. Leakages can occur with generated profits going out of the rural area (Eruera, 2008,P32).

putting a foot in the market is calling marketing, and it is “*the science and art of exploring, creating, and delivering value to satisfy the needs of a target market at a profit*” (Kotler, Answers Your Questions on Marketing Questions, 2017). Marketing can be defined as a set of 4-6 Ps, which are a mix of product, price, place, people, promotion, process, and which are defined as “*a set of controllable tactical marketing tools that the firm blends to produce the response it wants in the target market*” (Saunders, Kotler, Armstrong, & Wong, 1999, p. 109). These activities have been developed due to a strong competition in the markets among sellers and buyers, where each one tries to penetrate and manage its market mix to sell more or maximise profit. The marketing mix is, therefore:

### 1. *Product*

A product is a tangible thing or an intangible service that must achieve two trends to be sold in the markets (Kotler, Armstrong, Saunders, & Wong, 1999, p. 110). These trends are tangible and intangible characteristics (Taylor M. , 2012), and they are identified as follows:

The tangible trends include:

- a. Visually available to the consumer
- b. Color, size, price

And the intangible trends are about:

- a. Taste, quality, production methods, location
- b. Must be on the label or otherwise conveyed

### 2. *Price*

Price is the amount of money that customers or consumers pay for the product (Saunders, Kotler, Armstrong, & Wong, 1999, p. 110). There are several strategies for setting the product price by the producer. However, on the consumer’s side, it depends mainly on the customer's income.

### 3. *Place*

Place is the location that includes the activities that make the product available and within reach of the consumer’s hand. It includes channels, coverage, assortment, locations, inventory, and transportation (Saunders, Kotler, Armstrong, & Wong, 1999, p. 110).

### 4. *People*

They are the buyers who have interest in a product, who are called customer or consumer.

### 5. *Promotion*

The promotion is a communication between the producer and seller to the customer or consumer,

who tries to persuade them to buy a specific product (Saunders, Kotler, Armstrong, & Wong, 1999, p. 110).

Thus, market is a meeting point of many powers, where various activities and competitions are operating. Hence, to get this under control, economists have tried to divide the markets in order to facilitate the policy-making process (Grunert, 2017). Market is divided in several structures, which are monopoly, oligopoly, and perfect (Survivor, 2016). The monopoly market means there is one seller in the market, who sells a product. In addition, the term monopoly is derived from the Greek words 'mono', which means single, and 'poly' means seller (Akrani, 2010).

The oligopoly market occurs when two companies or producers contribute their activities together to dominate the market. The perfect competition market is the realistic space for buyer and seller, it imposes goods and services in the market regarding the supply and demand as well as price (Survivor, 2016). This market pattern is the ideal structure for equality and provides an equal opportunity for everyone to sell and buy; moreover, it reduces poverty. This market structure can be created when (Brown, 2012):

1. There are a large number of buyers and sellers in the same market.
2. Buyers and sellers sell identical products.
3. Each buyer and seller acts independently.
4. Sellers and buyers are reasonably well-informed about products and prices.
5. Competitors are free to enter into the market, and to conduct business or leave the market.

These points must be organised by government with the other parties, such as the private sector and civil organisations or NGOs, in order to be accessible to everyone (Survivor, 2016).

To secure the interior and national safety, there are two concerns government has to control and manage the market. First, domestic production must be strengthened to maintain the interests of domestic producers. Second, government must control the imported goods to protect local producers, and specifically strategic products. A specific set of products is related to national food security, and the others are related to the state or individuals' economy. In China and India, the strategic agricultural products are grain, grain pulses, and other foods such as pork and edible oils (Harkness, 2011, p. 2; Narayanan, 2015; Ramachandran, 2013). The strategic products or foods must be quantitatively and qualitatively protected by the government, and this support can be in two directions:

1. Supporting production by:
  - a. Subsidizing the input materials, including financial, seed, machinery, and other facilities, which are called the inputs.
  - b. Building human capacity via continuous training and orienting.

2. Supporting marketing activities:
  - a. Domestic support
  - b. Accessibility to the markets
  - c. Subsidising exports

### 3.6.2 Supply and Demand in the Markets

In general, the market accepts a product at a certain price, and this price is subject to change with change in supply and demand (Group N. , 2008, p. 8). In addition, the price is inversely increasing with product size and reducing demand and vice versa. However, it stabilizes when supply and demand reach an equal level, and then the market reaches saturation. Market saturation happens when this market is no longer accepting a new demand for certain products or services (Gregory, 2018).

These market concepts are applied to agricultural products as well, but with more complexity. These products have many characteristics; they can be sold fresh or can store in cold storages and then can be sold in another season, or can be canned or modified. Therefore, there are a number of factors that have great influence on these products; such as product quantity and quality, price of the product, availability at one time, which have been called the market mix (Group N. , 2008, p. 8; Saunders, Kotler, Armstrong, & Wong, 1999). An example is the maize local market in Mozambique (see Fig-17). Figure-17 provides three variables that have affected the market and these factors are producers, buyers and price. In Mozambique the season after maize harvesting starts in August. The producers bring their yields to market in large scale, which causes surplus and then the products are sold at a cheap price, which is called the “*seasonal price*<sup>28</sup>”. This price goes up after February when the demand is higher than supply. However, in the beginning of April to the end of June, the market becomes stable, when the surplus is about 55 to 65 percentage of the demand. The market stability will be broken on the middle of October when the maize comes in a new season of production. In this case supply and demand are sharply playing their major roles, and then there is also the role of policy-makers to prolong the time of saturation or market stability in order to arrange and manage the product in and out into the market.

---

<sup>28</sup> Seasonal price fluctuations (SPF) are regular patterns of price change occurring within a year, the result of uneven demand, production, or marketing (Plattner, Perez, & Thornsbury, 2012)

Figure 17-Production and price of Maize in Africa



Source: (Cunguara, 2001, p. 21)

There are similar examples of supply and demand influences of fresh agricultural products such as strawberries, peaches, grapes, apples and oranges in the USA's market (Plattner, Perez, & Thornsby, 2012, p. 3).

### 3.7 Combination of Conceptual Frameworks

In the previous sections, several variables were mentioned and must be linked directly or indirectly together. The main variables were policy, capital assets, and global and local markets. However, there are three main contributors in diverse levels of macro, meso and micro. The contributors are people from government institutions, people from the private sector and people from civil organizations who are the main stakeholders in rural areas. There are a number of approaches and concepts, which collect all these variables and partners together. In this regard, this study attempts to deal with the frameworks that included these variables, approaches, concepts, and people.

#### 3.7.1 The Social Capital by Castel

Castel (2002) designed a remarkable scheme of social capital in rural areas (see Fig-18). In this scheme, he has utilized most of the variables that have been addressed in this study. However, some connections among them are not easy to perceive. This framework has some advantages and disadvantages.

The advantages of this scheme are:

1. No party is marginalized; the framework includes all stakeholders from the public and private



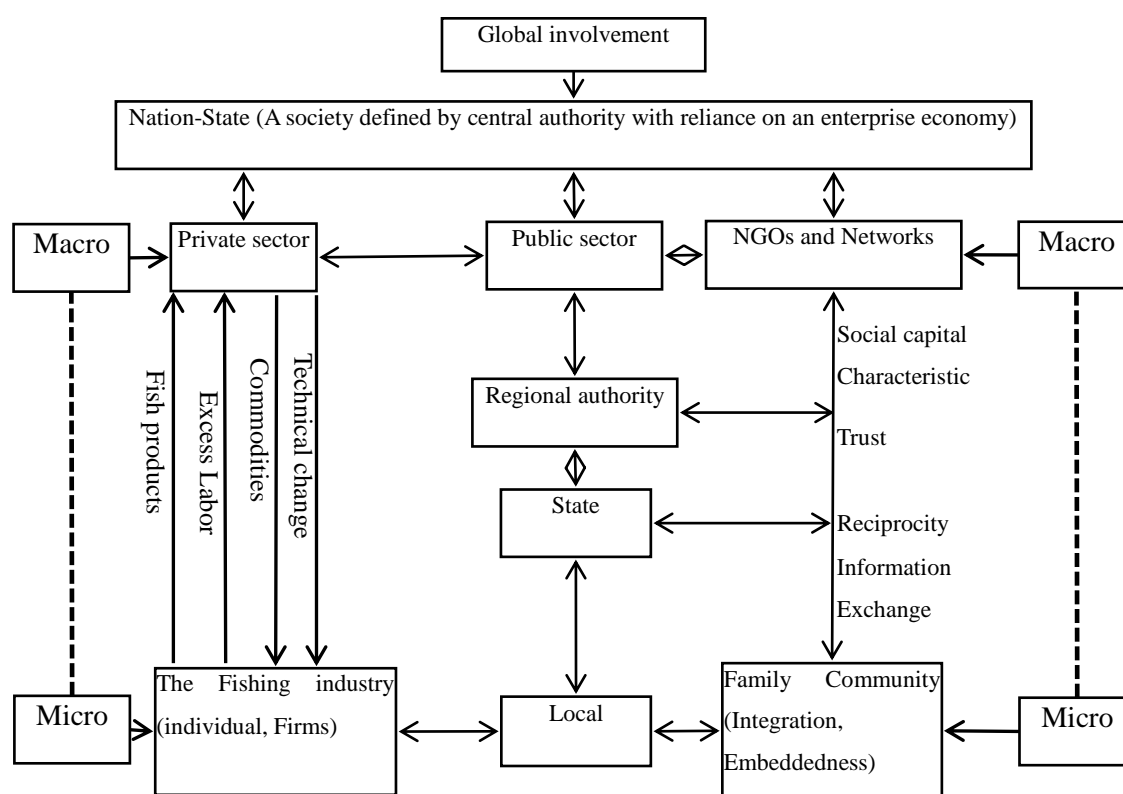
sector and NGOs.

2. Community is linked to global changes; thus, the scheme offers a certain role of individuals at the micro-level to the macro-level.

However, this framework has a number of disadvantages, such as:

1. Meso-level is absent in the scheme, although this level has been considered as the most important scale for management. In addition, it is not practical to connect directly micro-level with macro-level.
2. In the scheme, it has been identified that the private sector is the only institution which accesses the market and labor market, without disclosing how this should be accessed.
3. There is also not a direct link between the NGOs to the projects. Similarly, there was a lack of direct link between the private sector with families and communities.

Figure 18-Social capital in a nation state: micro to macro conditions



Source: (Castle, 2002, p. 341)

### 3.7.2 Overview of Sustainable Livelihoods Development

This study was needed in order to combine two concepts of livelihood sustainable development (LSD) and rural sustainable development (RSD) and gather the variables, concepts, approaches and contributors that have been addressed before. The LSD and RSD are cross-cutting and complement each other across many scopes. The first concept, which is the RSD, has been already articulated in the previous section; in addition, the second concept is much deeper, and will be

explained in detail in this section.

The term livelihood is composed of two words ‘lively’ meaning “full of life and energy; active and outgoing or when someone [is described] as lively when they behave in an enthusiastic and cheerful way” (Collins, 2006). And the second part of the word is ‘hood’, which means a cover for something (Collins, 2006), and can be defined as “denoting a condition or quality” (Dictionary R. H., 2010). Livelihood sustainable development altogether has been defined by the WCED (1987) as:

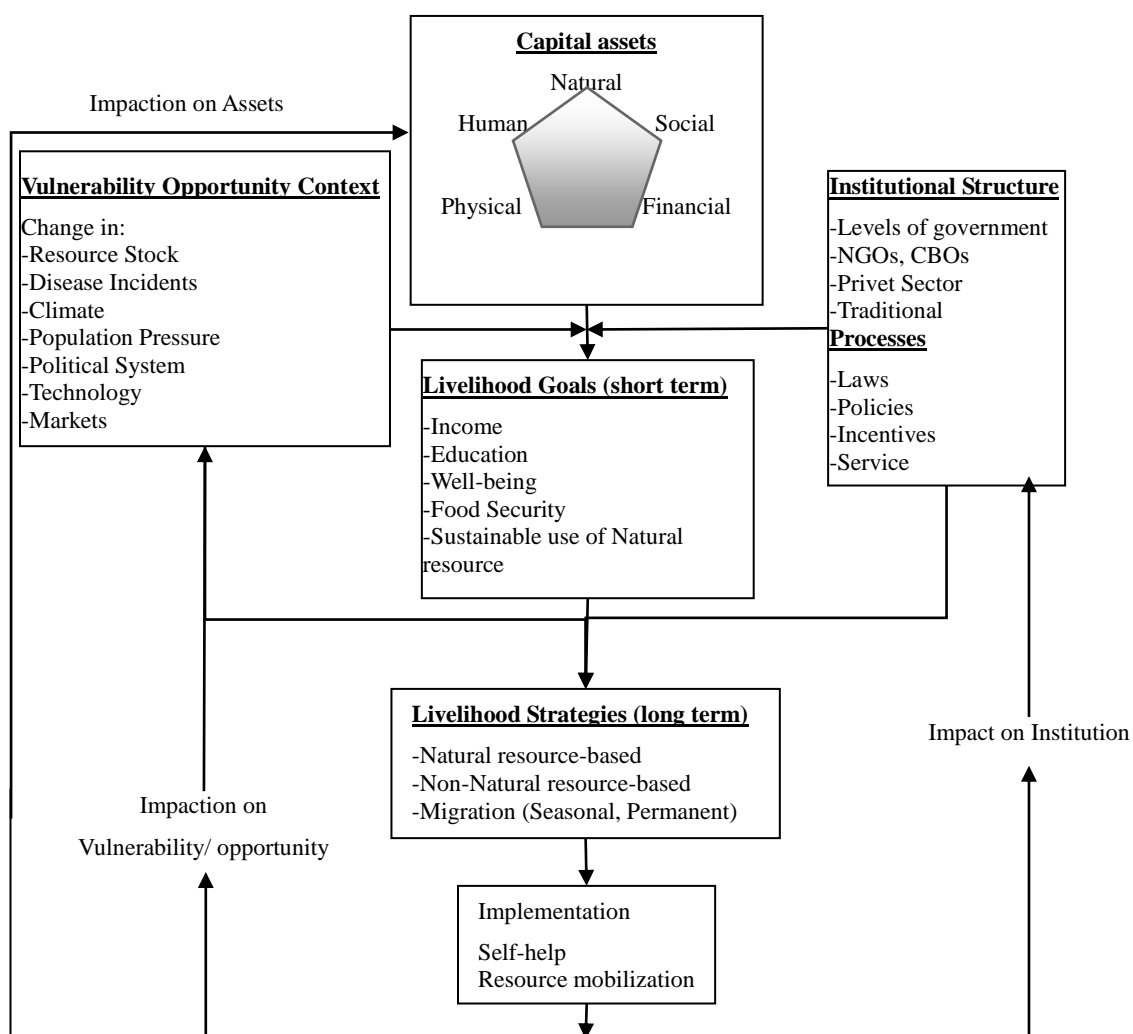
*“adequate stocks and flows of food and cash to meet basic needs. Security refers to secure ownership of, or access to, resources and income-earning activities, including reserves and assets to offset risk, ease shocks and meet contingencies. Sustainable refers to the maintenance or enhancement of resource productivity on a long-term basis. A household may be enabled to gain sustainability livelihood security in many ways – through ownership of land, livestock or trees; rights to grazing, fishing, hunting or gathering; through stable employment with adequate remuneration; or through varied repertoires of activities”* (Chambers & Conway, 1991, p. 5).

Moreover, Tovey (2009) defined livelihood sustainable development as:

*“the assets (natural, physical, human, financial and social capitals), the activities, and the access to these (mediated by institutions and social relations) that together determine the living gained by the individual or household”* (Dalal-Clayton, Dent, & Dubois, Rural Planning in Developing countries, 2003, p. 15).

The two definitions tell us that LSD has two concepts that must be applied; these are capital assets and people. Moreover, the rate of accessibility between these two points must be raised. This debate lasted for a long time with respect to changing the view of poverty; and then a new conceptual framework was normatively designed and drawn up by Ashley and Carney and has been followed and then developed by Dalal-Clayton and Dent (see Fig-19).

Figure 19-Livelihood Sustainable Development Structure

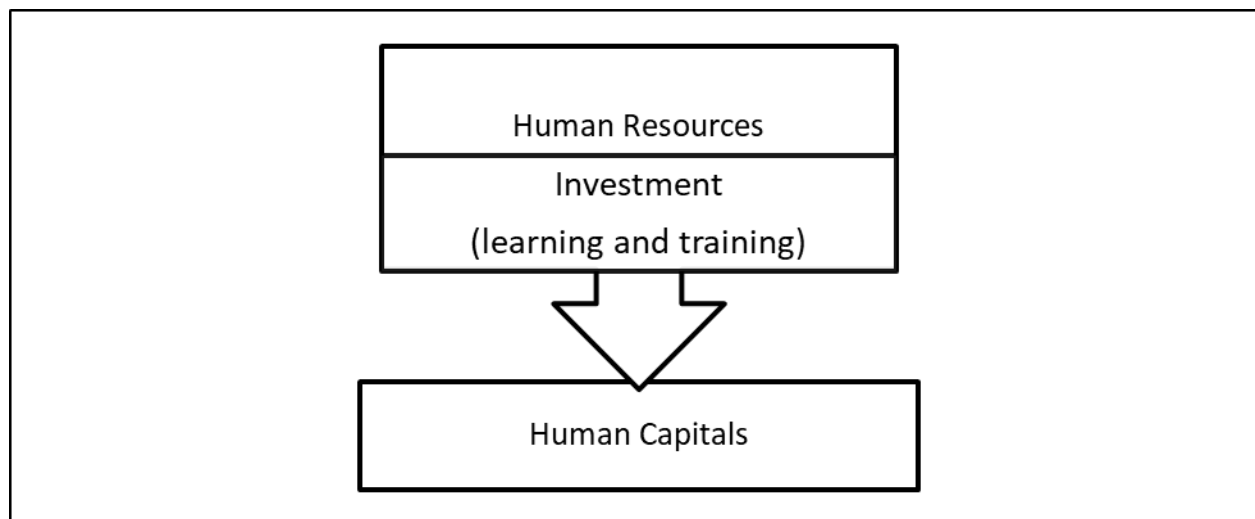


Source: Adapted from Carney (1998) by Dalal-Clayton and Dent (2001) (Dalal-Clayton, Dent, & Dubois, *Rural Planning in Developing countries*, 2003)

Very similar to urban areas, rural areas have some issues that must be developed and sustained such as natural, social, physical, human and financial capitals, which are called capital assets. Singh (1999) defined RSD as “a process leading to sustainable improvement in the quality of life of rural people, especially the poor” (Malhotra, Chariar, Das, & Ilavarasan, 2008, p. 217). Nevertheless, these programs must be built across several sectorial projects, which have a significant influence in rural areas. In these areas, the five capital assets are playing a major role in sustaining agricultural projects and other projects. The concept of capital assets is differentiated with resources. Iowa State University (2008) defined human capital as “the skills and abilities of people, as well as the ability to access outside resources and bodies of knowledge in order to increase understanding and to identify promising practices” (Allahdadi & Aref, 2011, p. 1). Thus, human capital are those individuals, who have been educated or trained, and are ready to do their duties including engaging in productivity (Abercrombie, Hill, & Turner, 2004). Therefore, capital

means something or someone that is ready to be used in a certain task (see Fig-20).

*Figure 20-Turning from human resources to human capitals*



*Source: Author's own construct (2016)*

In General, there are five assets addressed as the capital assets, and they are categorised by Carney (Farrington & Carney, 1998), as follows:

### *1. Natural capital*

This kind of capital asset consists of land, water, and the biological resources such as trees, pasture, and wildlife (O.E.C.D., *Analysing Policies Improve Agricultural Productivity Growth Sustainably*, 2015). In rural areas and in particular for the agriculture projects, land and water are the two essential resources that may be available and can be used to maximize project productivity in order to obtain a desirable income when, for example, villagers are choosing their locations based on their natural resources (Ko & Lou, 1997, p. 13; UNEP & IWMI, 2011, p. 11; Do & Iyer, 2003; Gold, 2007). Caldwell, Lynton Keith and Schrader-Frechette explained the significance of the land for rural areas, and stated “*land is a source of substance resources and wealth, the land is literally the base upon which all human societies are built*” (Caldwell & Schrader-Frechette, 1993).

### *2. Physical capital*

Physical assets include the infrastructures that have a direct influence on rural projects, such as roads, irrigation networks, energy and water networks and machinery. However, some physical assets are related to social issues, including tools and institutions such as education, culture, science, health, physical structure and tourism, and public administration, which are directly serving people (Gaworecki, 2003). This task of infrastructure is improving human welfare and

specifically the poor (Songco, 2002). The World Bank defined infrastructure as “*making reference to long-life engineering structures, equipment and facilities, and also the services that are derived from and utilized in production and in final household consumption*” (Torero, 2011, p. 5).

The infrastructures in rural areas serve villagers in two ways. In the first way, they are improving production, and in another they are affecting the selling process (Llanto, 2012, p. 16; Elinor, 2000, p. 174):

Production includes providing and facilitating all inputs, which enter into the production process or service, such as maintaining land, irrigation systems, energy networks, machinery, equipment, etc.

Marketing and selling include these processes from product loading in a field to the consumer’s hands, such as roads for transportation, locations to sell goods, etc.

### 3. *Financial capital*

It is a source of money that is necessary to sustain human life and projects. This financial asset can be a salary or other wages like remittances that people can run their own projects and finance their families. In addition, they improve their education and health services (Acosta, Fajnzylber, & Lopez, 2007; Vargas-Lundius, 2004).

### 4. *Social capital*

This capital asset is a collection of concepts such as community, family, social networks, participation and empowerment (Haug, 1999, p. 182). Pierre Bourdieu says, social capital is “*the aggregate of the actual or potential resources which are linked to possession of a durable network of more or less institutionalized relationships of mutual acquaintance or recognition*” (Bourdieu P., 1985). It is a nonmonetary asset, which focuses on relations between the villagers themselves and other communities and, in parallel with other assets, it enhances productivity, efficiency, and innovation (Liverpool-Tasie, Kuku, & Ajibola, 2012, p. 30; Portes, 1998). This capital strengthens cohesion among people, and additionally increases accessibility to the other capital assets (Astone. & Mclanahan, 1991).

### 5. *Human capital*

These assets consist of the quantity and quality of humans as an asset and not as a resource (see Fig-20). Human capital assets are still the main element which drives and manages projects. In the developed countries, and specifically in agricultural projects, these projects are still run by people despite the invention of technology which facilitated many processes and solved several

problems. However, this transformation of new technology could not reach the developing countries, and most of the project tasks are relied upon by human capital. On the one hand, this encouraged the number of family members in rural areas to be much higher than in urban areas. On the other hand, this growth has always been a problem. The revenue of the annual yield of a single project of a family will not be enough for all family members, and specifically when the children in the same family are grown. This causes difficulties to obtain a good income, and life becomes hard without the good income in rural areas. Therefore, many villagers did migrate to other places, especial skilled people.

The sustainable livelihood development structure has collected all the variables and set goals and strategies for short and long terms. The short term was for income, education, well-being, food security, and sustainable use of natural resources. However, the long-term strategies were for natural and non-natural resource-based strategies and migration (seasonal and permanent). From this perspective, migration appears to be a long-term problem and cannot be resolved in a short time. Nonetheless, this framework respected the concept of governance, and involved the main parties in the policy-making process. In addition, the risk of vulnerable factors that has a direct impact on capital assets has been taken into account.

Generally, there are some highlighted advantages of this conceptual framework as follows:

1. This framework covered three levels of micro, meso and macro (Carney, 2003, p. 13); however, it is more oriented to the micro-level and could assist the meso-level and macro-level by providing accurate information (Carney, 2003, p. 22). In addition, it guided the decision maker to the right direction.
2. It has brought together many public and private actors with NGOs (Carney, 2003, p. 15); however, it has not forgotten having the poor be in the heart of the process.
3. It has focused on the four key dimensions of sustainability, which are economic, social, environmental and sustainable (Carney, 2003, p. 15).
4. It relied on a short-term goal to win a long-term strategy, such as income and migration. (Carney, 2003, p. 21).
5. It focused on the access of poor people to capital assets in order to reduce the poverty rate (Carney, 2003, p. 5).
6. It is a regional approach rather than a sectoral approach (Carney, 2003, p. 19).
7. It focused on the principles of low-level governance and policy-makers to prioritize and sequence activities and focus on causes rather than symptoms (Carney, 2003, p. 19).
8. It linked livelihoods to the market; through which markets are seen as critical to sustaining livelihoods (Carney, 2003, pp. 22-23)

Despite the advantages, this conceptual framework has some disadvantages as well, such as:

1. Although the poor were mentioned, they have no specific kind of position in the framework.
2. There wasn't a clear task between the stakeholders and the actors in the conceptual framework, as it has been described that not all stakeholders can act as the actors.
3. There was no clear explanation of how the short-term objective would achieve a certain strategic goal.

Based on the fact that there is a strong relationship between the RSD and LSD, these two frameworks have several different dimensions. The RSD, as the first framework for rural development, could not succeed in making any progress without the LSD in sustaining the capital assets. The LSD could fill the gaps between macro-level and micro-level that the RSD could not (Ashley & Carney, 1999, p. 46). Moreover, the RSL is a sectorial process and has more focused on macro-level; however, the LSD is a regionally focused process and is more focused on micro-level than macro-level (Scoones, 2009, p. 172). In addition, it provides a clearer vision for poverty by participating and then linking the poor people at micro level to the international level to promote the principles of the governance (Scoones BIGORA, 2009). In this regard, it will be true if we say that these two frameworks intersect, supplement, and complement each other at the meso-level, in between the micro and macro levels. In addition, when the other sectors participate in the development process for generating or enhancing income, in parallel, the LSD fills the other gaps, such as reducing or reversing migration, or better managing natural and non-natural based strategies.

### **3.8 Income Policy**

In the previous sections, the reasons and solutions for migrations have been clarified. Moreover, the important types and roles of income have been explained, in particular in rural areas. However, the policy for generating and raising income was not elaborated. Therefore, this section deals with the important steps of policy and policy-making for income in rural areas.

Income is not an issue that can be directly evaluated. It is a relative process of a group of other processes in other sectors. Therefore, it is an issue that needs to be promoted by a policy in a specific field of income generation. As previously mentioned, agricultural, tourism and industrial sectors are the income generators in rural areas, and any policy for improving these sectors, or specifically in agricultural productivity and sustainability, will lead to an increase in income (O.E.C.D., *Analysing Policies Improve Agricultural Productivity Growth Sustainably*, 2015).

In each country, income policy is differently dealt with and for that reason, each policy targets a specific or a group of goals. In China, after the economic reform in the last several decades, the

income of farmers has been raised and distributed. The key focus was on market and education inequality for households and for preparing a skilled worker (Luo, Xubei; Zhu, Nong, 2008, p. 20). Moreover, in India, the government has been running a plan for decades to reduce poverty of the middle-class villagers via educational improvement in linkage with the industrial and trade sectors. Policies have been formulated to produce high value products<sup>29</sup>, and these policies could raise the household's income as well as the GDP by 1.7 percentage (Mullen, Orden, & Gulati, 2005). In addition, the Indian government could protect the local producers with policies including tariffs, quantitative import restrictions, and import licensing under the control of the market supply and demand (Mullen, Orden, & Gulati, 2005, p. 12). In Japan, the land reform policy after the Second World War was considered the most successful policy of this country, and motivated farmers to be more productive (Kawagoe, 1999). Moreover, in the sub-Saharan African counties, several policies have been implemented for increasing income. The key focuses of these policies were on social inclusion and equity by the public-sector management and institutions to provide a space for private investment to control the price volatility<sup>30</sup> in the market of rural areas (Chuhan-Pole & M. Buitano, 2016; Fischer & Khan, 1999). In addition, the EU countries after they unified tried to formulate policies for all agricultural policies in all EU countries, which is called the common agricultural policy (CAP). The CAP is focused on farmers as the main player and, in addition, this sector has linked the food industrial sector with optimum use of natural resources (Plewa, 2017). However, this policy has integrated with the other countries' policies step by step. For example, in Slovenia, the government reformulated policies for the agricultural sector to deal with the international market, and specifically to the EU market (Kumrc & Franic, 2005, p. 36).

Income policy for the agricultural-products and market is a mix of several types of policies in several fields, which provide equity and more accessibility to the capital assets for the targeted population (see Fig-21). These policies are made to provide a flexible market for producers and consumers, when markets these days are in a continuous state of change, globally and locally (Group N. , 2008, p. 11). Moreover, these policies help traders and small-scale producers to fill their gaps with markets (Group N. , 2008, p. 11), including such gaps as:

1. Lack of commercial know-how and information
2. Production and quality-related constraints

---

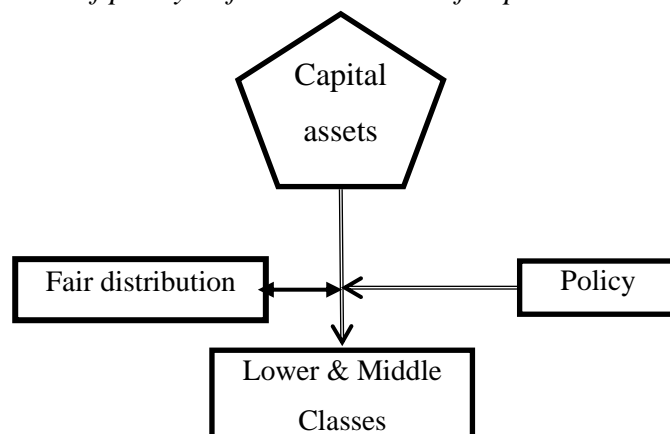
<sup>29</sup> Crops refer to non-traditional food crops such as vegetables, fruits, flowers, houseplants and foliage, condiments and spices (Temu & Temu, 2005, p. 2)

<sup>30</sup> The term "price volatility" is used to describe price fluctuations of a commodity (Administration, 2003). This phenomenon is more present in the agricultural sector than in other sectors due to a variety of economic, natural and political factors.



3. Lack of capital assets
4. Inability to take risks due to small margins for survival
5. Distrust and misgivings among different actors along value chains
6. Oligopolistic market structures
7. Weak governance in rural areas
8. Declining public investment in agricultural development, particularly advisory services

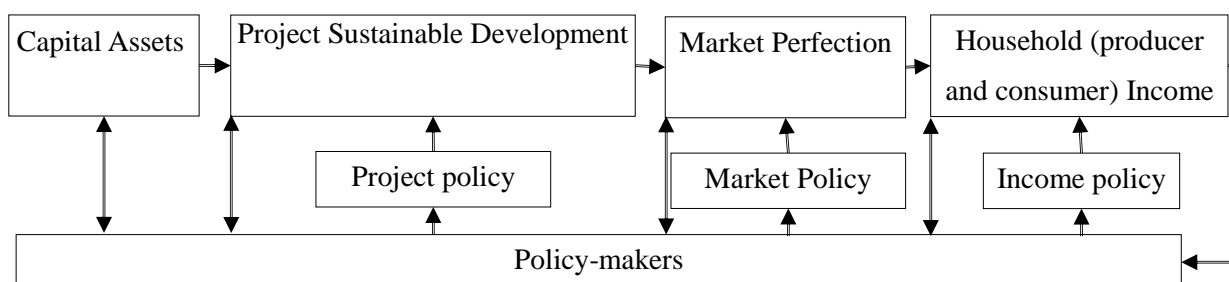
Figure 21-Role of policy in fair distribution of capital assets



Source: Author's own construct (2018)

Furthermore, capital assets should be clarified, as well as quantified from the sources to the target location in order to determine their usefulness. Here, the issue of capital assets and policy-making takes an extra step. For example, agricultural policy relies on a number of other policies, such as market policy, infrastructure promotion policy, capacity building policy, export-import trade policy, and so on (OECD, Policy Framework for Investment in Agriculture, 2013). For this sector, a set of supplementary policies should be prepared for in advance, such as the distribution of capital assets, facilities of sustainable development programs and providing a flexible market (see Fig-22).

Figure 22- Supplemental policies for agricultural policy



Source: Author's own construct (2018)

In general, policy takes into consideration a need to keep the balance between producer and consumer in the market. It starts from the poor people at the lower class to middle class of the

society. Policy tries to save a minimum profit of projects and a range of the consumer household quality of life. Hence, income policy can be demonstrated between two dimensions, and they are:

### 1. *Income based welfare policies*

In 1991, a theory was presented by Sherraden, which was a correlation of welfare to assets (Grinstein-Weiss & Curley, 2003). In this theory, the consumption capacity of a household is an indicator for the welfare level. The models of this theory are included in a set of policies, which are focused on the poor, and those who are near or under the level of the poverty line or who are searching for need stuffs. However, in each country, these models have been applied in different approaches. In the USA, this policy is implemented and supports individuals and low-income families. In the UK, this policy is run to support families by strengthening newborns (Doling & Ronald, 2010). In Germany, this policy provides three types of support for people who are unemployed or who cannot secure enough living through income and provides assets and free health care services (Keitel, 2015; B.A.M.S, 2016).

### 2. *Income based well-being policy*

This model of policy is aimed at achieving people's satisfaction (Dolan & Peasgood, 2012). It covers the people at the middle and higher classes of society or those people who are looking for the wants stuffs; however, this kind of policy is not going to be dealt with for this study.

## **3.9 Rural Development Policies in the KR of Iraq**

This section will attempt to explain the rural development events and policies that happened in the KR. For this, rural policies should be divided into three periods. The first period ranges from 1970 to 1990. As it was explained in chapter two, during this period government policies of the rural areas were formulated for destruction, which can be called the policy of anti-development<sup>31</sup>.

### **3.9.1 Policies of The Second Period**

The second period was an effective period for revitalization at the KR rural areas. It began from 1991 until 2003. The Kurdistan Region (KR) is a part of the Iraqi Federation. It is bordered by Iran to the east, Turkey in the north, Syria in the west and the rest of Iraq in the south. The region has three governorates and the capital is the city of Erbil (Hawler<sup>32</sup>) with two other governorates called Sulaimanya and Dohuk with an overall population of about 5.2 million (Institute, 2017) (see Fig-23). On 13 March 2014, Halabja became the fourth governorate of the KR (Government

<sup>31</sup> Opposed to development (Dictionary C. E., 2015)

<sup>32</sup> The capital city of Kurdistan Region has two names Erbil and Hawler

K. R., 2014). The Kurdistan Region forms 25% of the total area of Iraq and covered 90,000 km<sup>2</sup> (Institute, 2017); however, the current area is 35,570 km<sup>2</sup>. This part of the region was evacuated and then changed its demography by the Arabization, forced deportation, and Anfal operations (see Section 2.5). The provincial level in KR has four levels of administration from the city, district, and sub-district to the village. The city of Sulaimanya is the biggest, then followed by Erbil and Dohuk (see Tab-15 and 16).

Figure 23- Zones of KR after 2014



Source: (UNJHIC, 2001)

Table 15-The three Governorates of the KR

| Governorate                | District  | Sub-district                               | Area (KM <sup>2</sup> ) |
|----------------------------|---|--|-------------------------|
| Erbil (Governorate, Erbil) | 10  | 34   | 13,165                  |
| Sulaimanya                 | 14 (UNHCR, 2007)<br>15 (K.R.S.O., Sulaimanya Map, 2015) | 60 (K.R.S.O., Sulaimanya Population, 2015) | 15,852 (UNHCR, 2007)    |
| Dohuk                      | 7 (K.R.S.O., Dohuk Map, 2015)                           | 29 (K.R.S.O, 2015)                         | 6,553 (NCCI, 2015)      |
| Total                      | 31 or 32  | 123  | 35,570                  |

Source: Author's own construct (2015)

Table 16-The KRs' governorates total population

| Governorate | Pop. 2005 (UNHCR) | Pop. 2014 (KRSO) | Pop. 2015 (KRSO) |
|-------------|-------------------|------------------|------------------|
| Erbil       | 1,392,093         | 1,957,485        | 2,009,637        |
| Sulaimanya  | 1,715,585         | 1,894,867        | 2,039,685        |
| Dohuk       | 942,268           | 1,379,675        | 1,423,114        |
| Total       | 4,049,946         | 5,232,027        | 5,472,436        |

Source: Author's own construct (2015)

Since 1991, this region has been protected by the UN and the NATO forces as a secured line zone, which is called the no-fly zone. The region had its first election on 19, May 1992. After this election, a kind of independence and security was provided. A first and weak government was born. Some of the deportees<sup>33</sup> returned to their villages and were supported by the UN organizations and non-governmental organizations (NGOs) to rebuild again (Barwari, 2013, p. 365). The government's revenues and experience in managing this region were very limited (Barwari, 2013, p. 366; Aytar, 1995). In addition, this area was under two blockades by the United Nations and the Iraqi government (Aytar, 1995, p. 16). The United Nations blockade deprived Iraq of all kinds of commercial transactions, including food and medicine and the freezing of funds abroad (Incorporated, 2001). At the same time, the central government in Iraq reduced food supplies to the Kurdistan region to 40 percent and fuel to 20 percent (Bengio, 2012), and withdrew all the government institutions, cut the salaries of 200,000 government employees (Aytar, 1995, p. 16), and cut the public electric supply (Bengio, 2012). The Kurdish political parties moved forward and held an election. The first government was elected in 1992. This was formed between the main winners' parties of the Kurdistan Democratic Party (KDP) and the Patriotic Union of Kurdistan (PUK). They shared all the powers between each other and set up equal government policies under their approval. A new era was born for this region, and an opportunity was created for thousands of previously destroyed villages to be repopulated with the return of their people and to be rebuilt (Aytar, 1995, p. 47). Rural revitalization was one of the top priority issues for the regional government; however, there was not a clear plan (Aytar, 1995, p. 27). This region was ruled by the same old system as the central government in Iraq, which was a top-down model for policy-making. Beginning in 1993, the regional government began to revive the 853 villages in Erbil, 1,193 villages in Sulaimanya and 1,201 villages in Dohuk; however, not all the villagers returned to their place of origin (Aytar, 1995, p. 26). A number of non-governmental organizations, from Europe and the USA, had a great hand in this process (Aytar, 1995, p. 26). Despite its very limited ability, the Ministry of Agriculture of the Kurdistan region

<sup>33</sup> Who were deported to Iran and Turkey

was helping farmers as much as it could. The ministry was subsidizing peasants who were planting wheat, barley, rice, lentils, and chickpeas with fertilizer and pesticide. These products are the strategic products for food security in the KR. In 1999, annual wheat production was 250,000 tons, while the food security level required 200,000 tons (Aytar, 1995, p. 47).

Despite rebuilding a large number of the destroyed villages, and challenging the two blockades, there was an intensive internal conflict between the two main parties, which led to fighting each other on May 1, 1994 (Bengio, 2012). The regional government was in a bad economic and political situation and faced an internal war. There was no chance for the government to conduct its duties properly (Aytar, 1995, p. 27). However, people were in a very poor economic condition. For example, an employee in the Directorate of municipality was taking 200 dinars / Iraqi dinars, equivalent to \$3/month (Aytar, 1995, p. 27). The unemployment rate was 80%, inflation rose to 100% (Bengio, 2012), and agricultural projects became a major source of income for villagers as well as a food supplier.

Beginning in 1996, the United Nations proposed a program, called the Oil-for-Food program, to save the Iraqi people. The program allowed the Iraqi government to sell its oil and in return buy food and medicine and repairs essential for infrastructure (Ibrahim, 2012, p. 5). The proceeds of this program have been earmarked in two parts. The big share was for 15 provinces under the control of the Iraqi government. The remaining three provinces of Erbil, Dohuk, and Sulaimanya were under the control of the United Nations itself on behalf on the Iraqi government. Despite the advantages, this program also had many disadvantages. Basic foods, such as flour, rice, chickpeas, lentils, edible oil, sugar and some detergents, had been given to the people almost free of charge. However, these foodstuffs were not purchased from the local market but were imported from abroad. Producers of cereal crops, who were producing wheat, rice, chickpeas, and lentils, were negatively affected (Ibrahim, 2012, p. 5). The program was an emergency program and did not take into account the principles of sustainable development (Ibrahim, 2012, p. 5).

### **3.9.2 Policies of The Third Period**

This period began after the fall of Saddam's regime in 2003. After the invasion of Iraq by the USA in 2003, a new system was established for Iraq. Moreover, from May 2003 to July 2004, Paul Bremer, the USA military ruler, ruled Iraq (Martin, 2013). In 2005, a new constitution was drafted, and in this new constitution, the Kurdistan Region became an official federal district in Iraq. The Kurdistan Regional Government (KRG) received more power to govern itself and has benefited from 17% of the annual budget of Iraq. This period has filled the major gaps, the lack of budget, internal fighting, and freedom of policy-making, which had previously suffered. The

salaries of government employees in the Kurdistan Region were equivalent to the central government in Iraq. In addition, the two empowered parties, KDP and PUK, in order to gain people's loyalty, employed a large number of unnecessary employees in the public sector, including farmers. The range of salaries of the government employer was between 209,000 dinars, equivalent to \$174 up to a maximum of 3,000,000 dinars, equivalent to \$ 2,500. However, the salary of a special title, such as general director or minister, was between 3,000,000 to 8,000,000 Iraqi dinar (IQD).

The most prominent decision of the KRG was new investment laws. This new law was presented by the KRG and approved on July 4, 2006 (Government K. R., 2006). The contents of the law provided a very flexible space for investors to invest in diverse sectors. The investors, and particularly foreigners, were competing for each other to have a foot in the KR's market and brought millions of dollars to the KR markets (Soylemez, 2013, p. 42). This area has become the most invested part of Iraq and has been referred to as a "*success story for investment*" (Aqrawi, 2010). Erbil, the capital city of the KR, was the most prosperous economy in comparison to Sulaimanya and Dohuk, with most attention on a housing project (CNN, 2009). However, the agricultural sector did not invest properly (Soylemez, 2013, p. 7). In mid-2006, about \$14 billion was recorded in the sector (Aqrawi, 2010). The investment laws were very generous; in addition, this region was very stable as well. Of course, big projects need a big labor force. The regional Government was not controlling the labor market (Heshmati, 2007, p. 18), and it was very easy to find a job with a good salary in the developed cities, Erbil, Sulaymania, and Dohuk. Hence, the developed cities were becoming centers of the better income and attracted people around and from the rural areas. Therefore, the most affected sector in this era was the agricultural sector.

### **3.10 Conclusion**

Rural planning must consist of three important elements (PlanAfric, 2000), and these elements are:

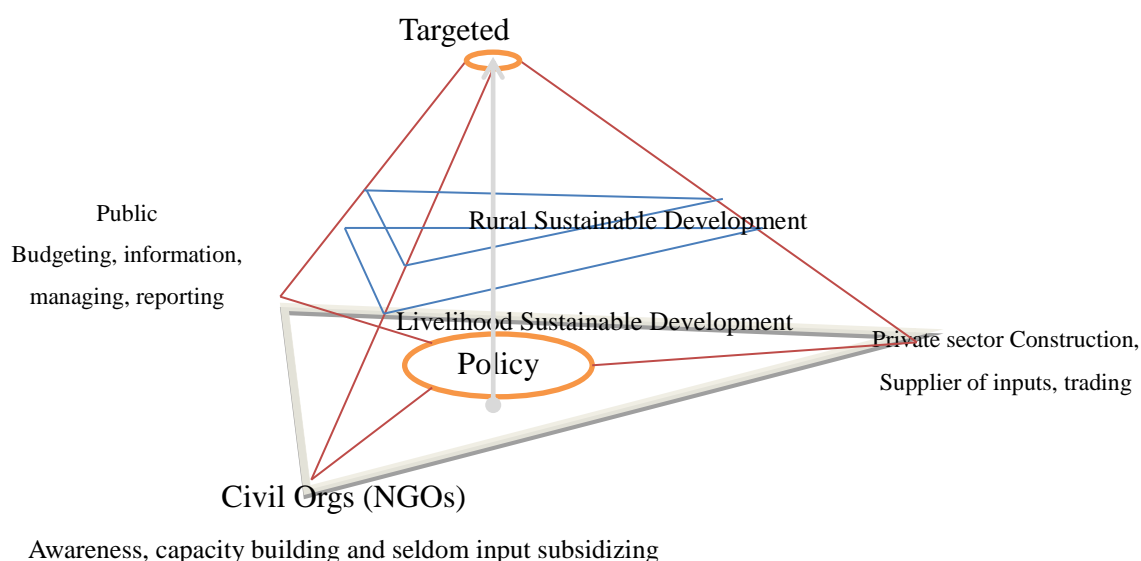
1. Content: The strategies and policies that underlie what rural planning seeks to achieve.
2. Institutional framework: Within which rural planning operates, especially the agencies and people involved and how they interact.
3. Approach: Transferring from the top-down approach to the bottom-up.

The literature review revealed many independent and dependent variables as well as sub-variables between migration and income. The channels for satisfactory income can be provided through markets. In addition, market accessibility can be increased by sustainable development programs via capital assets. Nonetheless, the policy-making process should be formulated in a diverse space of participation, and the meso-level approach is the best option for respecting the

overall objectives of both macro-level and micro-level.

These variables and concepts can be placed in the horizontal and vertical dimensions of a pyramid (see Fig- 24). The peak of the pyramid is the targeted people; the bottom of the pyramid is the position of the policy-makers, representing the stakeholders. They act together through the frame of Rural Livelihood Sustainable Development (RLSD) to raise income in the short-term and then control the people's movement in the long-term.

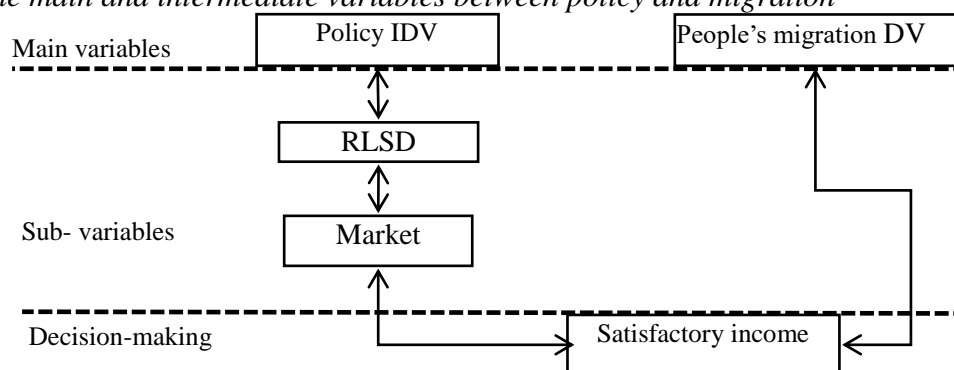
Figure 24- Pyramid of participation (PP)



Source: Author’s own construct (2016)

Interlinkages and arrangement of the variables and concepts can be constructed in a new framework (see Fig-25). The two main variables, which are the independent policy and the dependent migration, are on the top. Through mediation by sub-variables, income channels can generate satisfactory income, and villagers decide to migrate or not migrate based on the income amount.

Figure 25- The main and intermediate variables between policy and migration

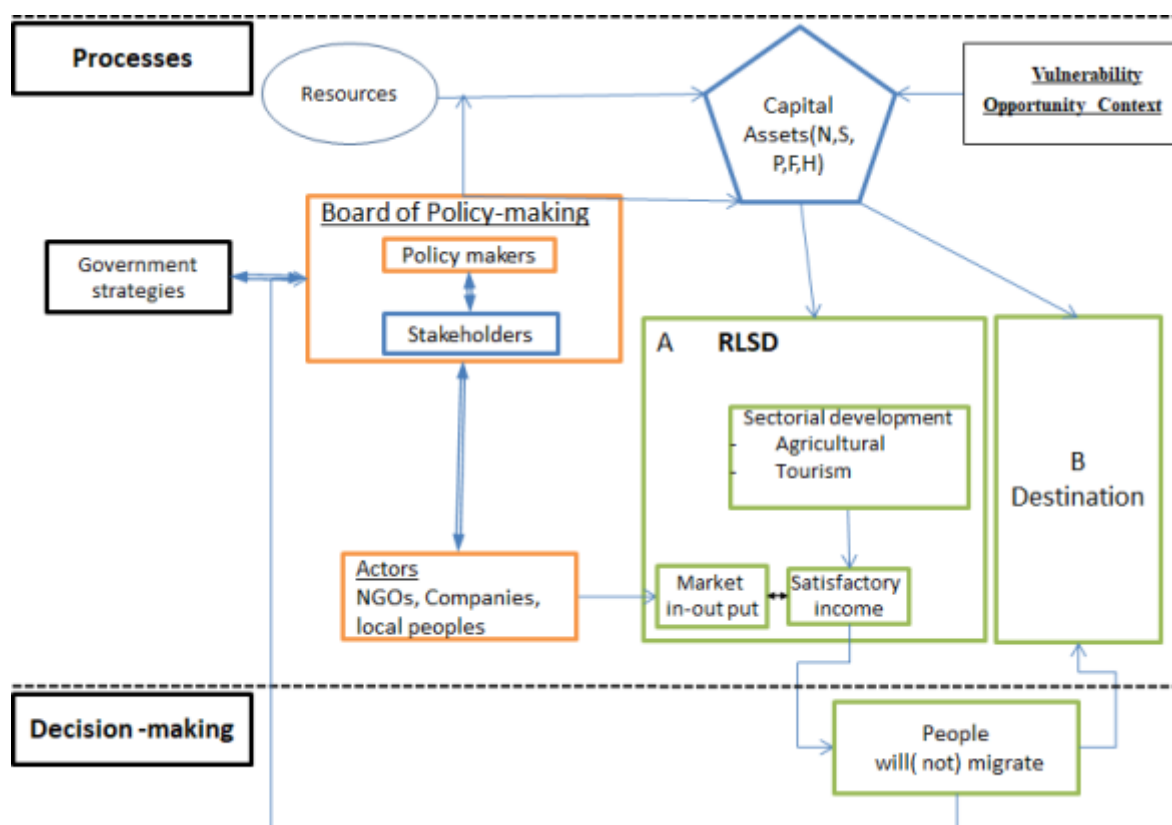


Source: Author’s own construct (2016)

In further clarification, the variables can be connected to the capital assets and stakeholder’s

role and also all can be correlated with the governmental strategies. Therefore, there was a need to structure and then propose a clear conceptual framework in which to serve rural sustainable development programs from the international perspective and then to cope with the national level. Hence, another structure for the variables can be composed in more detail (see Fig-26). It starts from transforming the resources to capital assets and this is performed by the board of policy-making, which consist of governmental policy-makers, stakeholder and actors. And then the capital assets utilized by the same board with the addition of local people. Even when these capital assets do not exist in a region, this board can manage this shortfall and bring the assets from another place. In each step, the government institutions are engaged in this process and have a major role. Furthermore, the government has another role to translate the policies from the macro-level to the lowest level via the meso-level in order to increase market accessibility and increase or balance income.

Figure 26- Policy of re-migration based on income satisfaction



Source: Author's own construct (2016)



## **CHAPTER FOUR: METHODOLOGY**

This chapter will systematically cover all activities from the beginning to the final report of this study. It begins with the essence of matching philosophical ideas, and then follows with the methodological models, approaches, and strategies of this study. It then seeks to find and utilize the best approach (whether a quantitative or qualitative or mixed), in order to answer the question of this study. However, this depends on the nature of the problem context.

The previous chapters help the researcher to identify the variables that influence migration. The chapters provide a deep understanding of the correlation among them in one framework. From this framework, the research questions of this study are raised and inform the research design. The research design demonstrates and is constructed to clarify the paths of the data collection. A proper tool and technique will be used for analysing the collected data. The chapter then ends with a final report, which includes conclusions and recommendations.

### **4.1 Theoretical Perspective and Approaches**

Philosophical aspects are the necessities of scientific research, but they cannot complete the entire process of a study. These aspects are incapable of placing the researcher in the right direction, but they can guide the researcher. Therefore, the theoretical perspective is another part of scientific research that must be considered. It is *“the theoretical stance informing the methodology and thus providing a context for the process and grounding its logic and criteria”* (Crotty, 2003, p. 7). Furthermore, the methodological part of the research reveals those needs and interpretations about the problem to investigate and explore. Hence, the methodology is *“seen for what it truly is—a way of preventing me from deceiving myself in regard to my creatively formed hunches which have developed out of the relationship between me and my material”* (Rogers C. , 1955). Alan Kazdin has identified methodology in another way and stated *“methodology refers to the principles, procedures, and practices that govern research”* (Kaufman & Kaufman, 2005, p. 22).

There are three types of research approaches which are employed in scientific study, and these are qualitative, quantitative and mixed (Naoum, 2007, p. 37; Creswell, 2009, p. 3). These can be used inductively or deductively, be descriptive or explanatory or exploratory, analytical or normative or predictive to handle the problems and gaps. Another criterion for the research is the limitation and dimensions of the study. Any study must have clear boundaries; otherwise, the researcher cannot reach the end. A set of questions will be helpful to use for enclosing the study, and these are:

- a. Which approach is a good strategy to be taken for answers to the questions?
- b. What kind of investigation should be taken and to what extent?
- c. How should the end report be constructed?

### *1. Quantitative research*

One of the scientific research approaches is quantitative research. It includes studies that use statistical analysis to obtain their findings (Kaufman & Kaufman, 2005, p. 17). In other words, it is an approach to test the theories and concepts objectively and deductively between the independent variable (IDV) and dependent variable (DV). Through this approach, the measurable variables are gathered and analysed statistically, and then interpreted in the final report. The beginning of this approach starts with a structure consisting of an introduction, literature and theory, methods, results, and discussion (Creswell, 2009, p. 4).

The quantitative approach is considered a more generalizable approach because it deals with a large number of samples. It builds upon a positive hypothesis or a number of hypotheses and then tests them based on one reality (Naoum, 2007, p. 37). The outputs from this approach are not abstracted, they are hard and reliable; and their measurements and outputs are tangible, countable, sensate features of the world (Bouma & Atkinson, 1995). Moreover, this approach takes a sample from population and the results will be generalized to the selected population. In addition, the research design in this approach is in an advanced stage before the research begins and it deploys a number of statistical tools to make the aggregation, categorization, and comparison easier (Tamanja, 2014, p. 57).

### *2. Qualitative research*

A qualitative approach is a well-known second strategy of scientific research aside from quantitative strategy (Kaufman & Kaufman, 2005, p. 17). It is another strategy that can be employed for studies that cannot be addressed through the quantitative approach. This approach deals with non-quantitative issues, such as feeling, behavior, trend, and the humanitarian attitude. As the social world is an area of diverse expertise, everyone wants to be examined or reconsidered in his or her environment (Marvasti, 2004, p. 1). Similarly, each individual interprets himself or herself in this environment randomly or selectively. Sometimes he or she accepts adjustment or sometimes rejects the current situation and wants to release or change the unwanted reality if he/she can. This accepting or rejecting has made the public opinion to be in a continuously changing state (Spirkin, 1983). In other words, the qualitative approach is employed to explore and understand the meanings of certain issues or events or changes by individuals or groups, to see how they behave (Marvasti, 2004, p. 1; Creswell, 2009, p. 37).

Unlike the quantitative strategy, the qualitative approach has no single reality to be discovered in the social world, but the process of interpretation will highlight the facts about people and their environment (Tamanja, 2014, p. 56). The questions, procedures and data will be typically and subjectively collected from the participants and collectively interpreted. Nonetheless, from a small population sample, the researcher places himself or herself in a problem or within problems, and collects the data, and then interprets them via social criteria. Hence, the structure of the final report will be very flexible (Creswell, 2009, p. 17).

### 3. *Mixed method*

The quantitative and qualitative approaches, despite their advantages, have a number of disadvantages. Many cases which were not purely quantitative or qualitative required explanation and exploration, but failed when these two approaches were taken separately. The third approach could fill the gaps and combined these two strategies (Creswell, 2009, p. 203) and is called mixed method. Both Creswell and Plano Clark defined the mixed methods as:

*“a research design with philosophical assumptions as well as methods of inquiry. As a methodology, it involves philosophical assumptions that guide the direction of the collection and analysis of data and the mixture of qualitative and quantitative data in a single study or series of studies. Its central premise is that the use of quantitative and qualitative approaches in combination provides a better understanding of research problems than either approach alone”* (Clark & Creswell, 2007, p. 5).

The mixed method could more synergize qualitative and quantitative research, and was a transformation from a sole empiricist or constructionist to the realistic. This method was able to deal practically and philosophically with three social, economic, and environmental dimensions in one study. Further, it can inductively detect patterns and deductively test theories and hypothesis and detects and relies on the best interpretation to understand the results (Johnson & Onwuegbuzie, 2004). Thus, it is applicable in a wide range of issues such as nursing, psychology, education, sociology, literature, information science, information systems, and political science (Steven R. Terrell, 2012). As Terrell has described, this approach relies on four factors:

1. Theoretical perspective
  - a. Explicit –based firmly on a theory
  - b. Implicit –based indirectly on a theory
2. Priority of strategy
  - a. Equal
  - b. Qualitative
  - c. Quantitative

3. Sequence of data collection implementation
  - a. Qualitative first
  - b. Quantitative first
  - c. No sequence
4. The point at which the data are integrated
  - a. At data collection
  - b. At data analysis
  - c. At data interpretation
  - d. With some combination

The mixed method can be concurrently or complementarily studied in triangulation. It is flexible and can be designed qualitatively or quantitatively and can be re-used again as necessary. Creswell categorized the mixed methods into three types (Creswell, 2009, p. 121), which are:

1. *Sequential*

In this design, the researcher seeks to develop or expand his findings from one method to another. It starts qualitatively to explore some answers and then explains quantitatively or vice versa.

2. *Concurrent*

In this type, the researcher collects data from both approaches simultaneously, and then the data will be merged and interpreted for the overall result (Creswell, 2009, p. 123).

3. *Transformational*

In this type, the researcher uses a theoretical lens from a comprehensive perspective. In a design framework that includes quantitative and qualitative approaches. This lens provides a framework for topics of interest, methods of data collection, and results or changes expected by the study. Under this lens, the method of data collection can be a sequential or concurrent approach (Creswell, 2009, p. 15).

## 4.2 Positionality

Due to the fact that policy can affect migration, the researcher's position on this point is positive. However, some issues regarding migration are not very clear. In terms of the problem sequence, a quantitative first step is necessary to find the magnitude and effects of the demolition of the villages carried out by previous policies of the Iraqi government. On the other hand, this fluctuation in migrations in the rural areas of the KR motivates the researcher to take another position, and pushes deeper exploration to the causal factor of this problem. Thus, a small sample number is used in interpretation of the events. Therefore, the design of this study adopts a mixed triangulation approach.

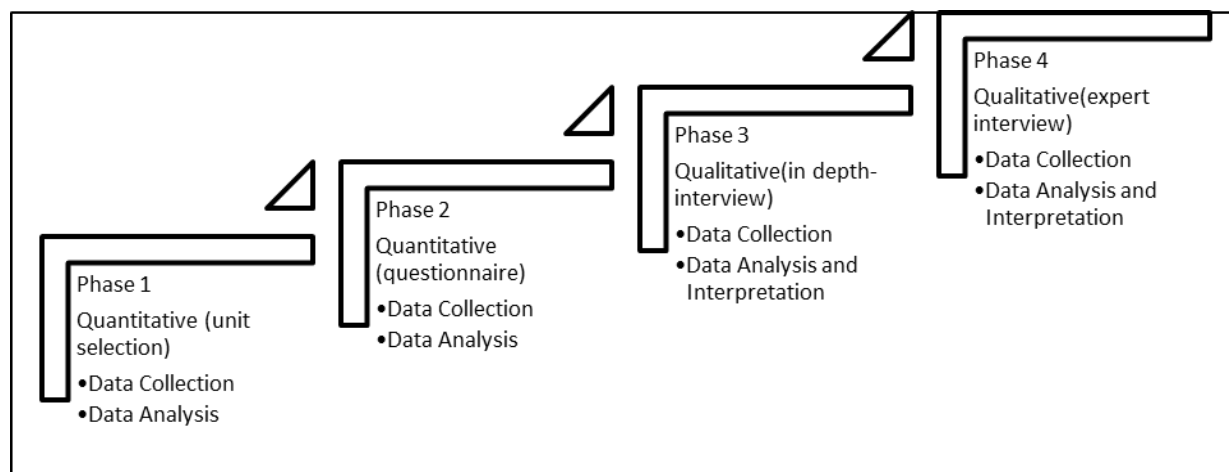
## 4.3 Research Design and Boundaries

Yin states that “*research design is a practical plan to get from here to there*”, when “*here*” can be defined as a preliminary set of questions to be answered, and “*there*” can be some conclusions or answers to these questions (Naoum, 2007, p. 37; Yin, 2009, p. 26). Between “*here and there*” a number of key steps can be found, including the collection and analysis of relevant data.

### 4.3.1 Research Sequential

Among the three categories of research designs and based on the nature of the problem or problems, this study follows the sequential model. It starts from a quantitative approach and goes to a qualitative approach using what is called sequential explanatory mixed methods (see Fig- 27). Through the quantitative approach, this study is refined to determine a unit for the case that may represent or relate to the events in the rural areas of the KR. Moreover, another part of the quantitative stance in this study is to test the hypotheses either to falsify or verify, and support the drawn conceptual framework of policy-making for rising income. However, the qualitative part in this study complements the quantitative part, and aims to explore the villagers’ opinion about the past and future policies of income.

Figure 27- Sequential explanatory mixed methods design



Source: Modified from Creswell (Creswell, 2009, p. 209)

#### 1. Quantitative phase

In the quantitative phase, this study attempts to describe the magnitude of the impacts that the rural areas in the Kurdistan Region of Iraq have faced. Similarly, it attempts to determine when and what happened. The result of this step selectively drives this study to use the next step, which is a selection of a unit or units for the case. This part was conducted in the field survey of all destroyed villages. Although it is not feasible to survey the entire field, the previous documents,

publications, and raw data will help save some time and cost for the research.

Regarding the context of this study, there are two possibilities of the methods for this study, and they are historical and archival methods. Both deal with past events; however, the archival can be applied when the eyewitness are alive. Archival seeks to find answers to "*who, what, where, how many*" questions and it can elaborate on what happened in the past (Nicholas, 2015; Yin, 2009, p. 8).

The archival research method refers "*to using extant datasets for the purposes of making inferences*" (Nugent, 2013). This method is a flexible one in that researchers can reuse primary or secondary data with less cost and less time. In this method, data may collect from records, public documents or those maintained by public administrations, organizations, or individuals in a particular case. The archival data is included in many sources (Yin, 2009, p. 105), such as:

- 1- Public use files
- 2- Service records
- 3- Organizational records
- 4- Maps and charts
- 5- Survey data

In this method, the researcher will have to use data that might not meet his or her criteria or may be unreliable, but he can use the most necessary data data and ignore the rest of the data (Abesamis, 2016) (see Tab-17).

*Table 17-Advantages and disadvantages of the archival method*

| # | Advantage   | Disadvantage   |
|---|---|--|
| 1 | No additional data collection required  | Often good to moderate validity                            |
| 2 | Low cost  | Usually allows for historical comparison or trend analysis |
| 3 | Relatively rapid, unobtrusive   | Often allows for comparisons with larger population        |
| 4 | When rules of record keeping are changed, it makes trends analysis difficult or valid | May be difficult to access local data                      |
| 5 | Need to learn how records were compiled to access validity                            | Often out of date  |

| # | Advantage   | Disadvantage   |
|---|---|--|
| 6 | May not be data on knowledge, attitudes, and opinions | May not be providing a complete picture or situation |

Source: (Abesamis, 2016)

The second phase of the quantitative approach in this study is the testing of the hypotheses and conceptual framework that has been built into the theoretical part. In this instance, the concepts will be tested for their validity.

## 2. Qualitative phase

Another part of this study is conducted through a qualitative approach. The quantitative approach lacks the ability to explain some factors that relate to migration. These are factors that have impeded reverse migration or caused re-migration in rural areas of the Kurdistan Region. Some questions about these factors were necessary and, in this study, two times ‘what’ is inquired when this form of question is used for different purposes. In one way, it means ‘how many’ or ‘how much’, which it uses to quantify the size of demolition through survey and archival methods. In addition, the other ‘what’, which is used in this study to explore something, is the form of ‘what’ used to answer normative and in-depth questions (Yin, 2009, pp. 9,106).

Another form of research question in this study is ‘how’. This type of inquiry is used to explore the approach that has been applied by the KRG and its outputs through case study method. This form of inquiry through using ‘how’ can be used by the case study methods to qualify and explore social and political phenomenon (Yin, 2009, p. 4). This is particularly relevant for migration, which is a complex social phenomenon (Holobinko, 2012). In addition, Yin shows other advantages of ‘how’ question in the case study method. Yin states that “*a how or why question is being asked about a contemporary set of events over which the investigator has little or no control*” (Rowley, 2002, p. 17). Thus, the case study method can be used for several purposes (Naoum, 2007, p. 45), which are:

- a. Descriptive case study
- b. Analytical case study
- c. Explanatory case study

### 4.3.2 Research Boundaries

Each research has its boundaries, and these boundaries can be temporal or geographic (or spatial) or can be limited to a group of people or a targeted sample. Likewise, this study also has several

limitations as follows:

### 1. *Temporal boundary*

With regard to the consequences for rural areas in the KR, this study is concerned with migrations that took place between 1970 and 2017.

### 2. *Spatial boundary*

Spatially, this study focuses on rural areas where migration has occurred and focuses on the places that have most severely suffered. Therefore, the case study will be dealt with as an extreme case.

### 3. *Targeted sample*

Policy and migration are the effects and causes between policy-makers and people. Therefore, these two types of people (policy-makers and people in villages) are the main segments for qualitative. However, for the quantitative inquiry it entirely focuses on the villagers in this study.

## 4.3.3 Research Process

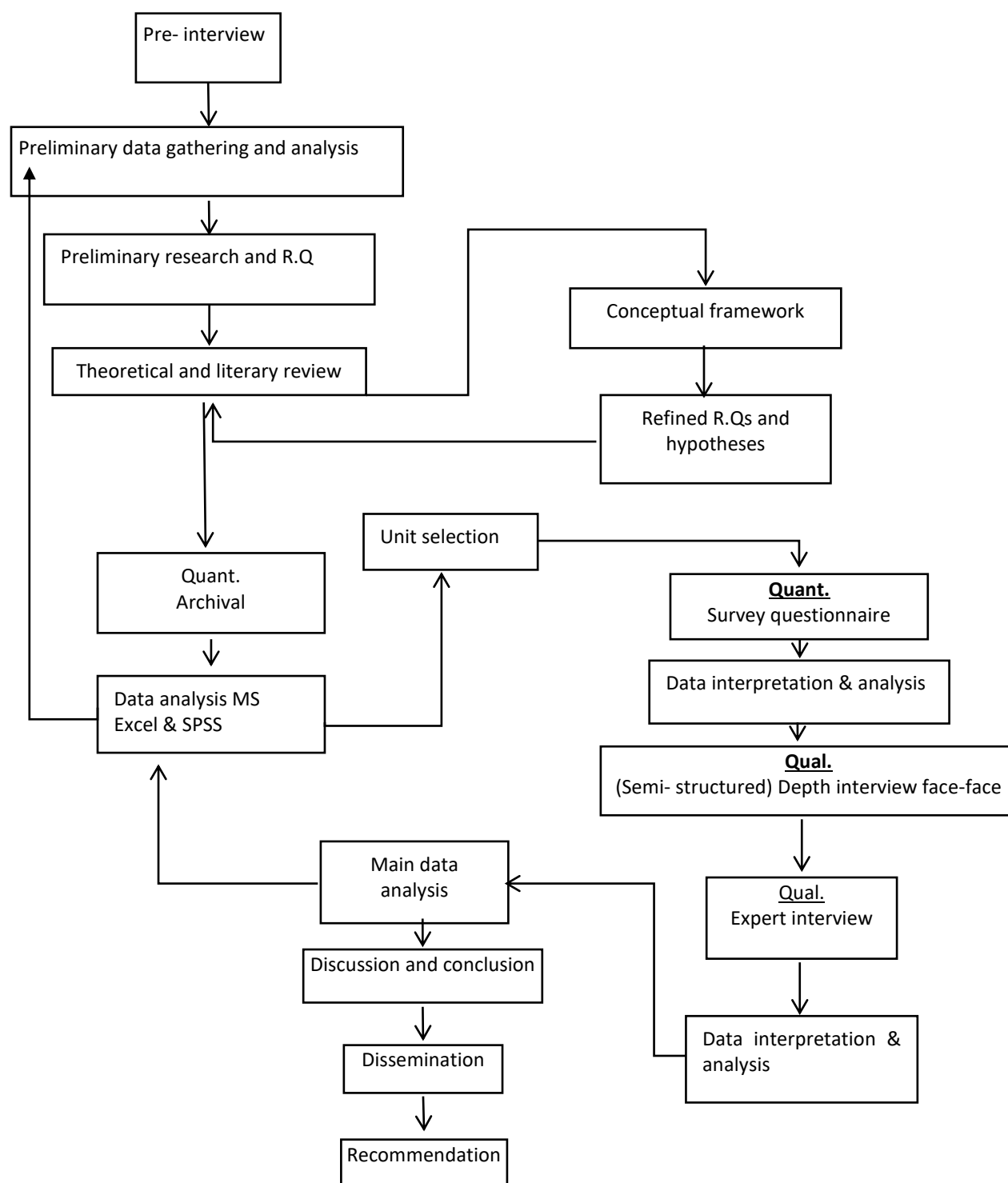
It was not easy to design the paths of this study. The migration phenomenon in the KR has many scopes and several factors, and it occurred several times for several reasons. Thus, this study began with a short pre-interview. This interview was simply based on some semi-structured open-ended questions in a non-random inquiry of people at some demolished villages. The results of this interview helped in hearing the people's feedback on migration through a telling of the past and present problems. However, this step was not enough to build proper research questions. Deeper reviewing of literature at the international level about migration, policy-making, and sustainable development, and income has cleared the path to reformulate the preliminary questions. The research questions reflect the international understanding of policy for rising income and they emerged from the context of problems in the rural areas at the KR.

With regard to the problem background, this study falls within two approaches (see Fig-28). Quantitatively this study deals with numerical issues to select units of the case, which are then used for the fieldwork. The second quantitative part is the testing of the conceptual framework that tests the hypothesis in the selected units of the case. In addition, the conclusions will be proposed to the government institutions of the Kurdistan Regional Government.

Furthermore, the qualitative part is applied in the selected units in order to find non-numeric issues. The data is then analysed and interpreted. The final part of this study will be summarized with conclusions, and recommendations for using or not using the conceptual framework.



Figure 28- Research process



Source: Author's own construct (2016)

#### 4.4 Study Site and Justifications

Within the research design, the first quantitative stance is for finding the selection of the unit or units. Selection of the unit is an initial step that is then followed by conducting fieldwork. The process of the unit or units selection in the rural areas of the Kurdistan Region cannot be

immediately determined. There are some other criteria that should be taken into consideration. The unit or the units must be relevant to the three eras of policy-making, which were the first, second, and third periods. During the first era, these areas have suffered from former policies (see Tab-18). The events that have happened in the first policy era were:

1. Arabization
2. Deportation
3. Mass murder which occurred in various forms:
  - a. The Anfal campaign
  - b. Chemical attack

Therefore, this will be the first criterion for unit selection. Furthermore, the second era policy is starting from 2005 when the new law of investment negatively affected all the villages; therefore, any unit can be selected for this period.

*Table 18-Classification of migrations on the basis of their extreme condition*

|   |         |
|---|---------|
| 1- Arabization  | slight  |
| •Migration was an art of deportating of the villagers and bring Arab families to their places |         |
| 2- Deportation  | medium  |
| •The reasons for this migration were forced deportation and demolition of the villagers       |         |
| 3- Mass murder  | extreme |
| •The causes of migration were deportation, demolition, and murder of the villagers            |         |

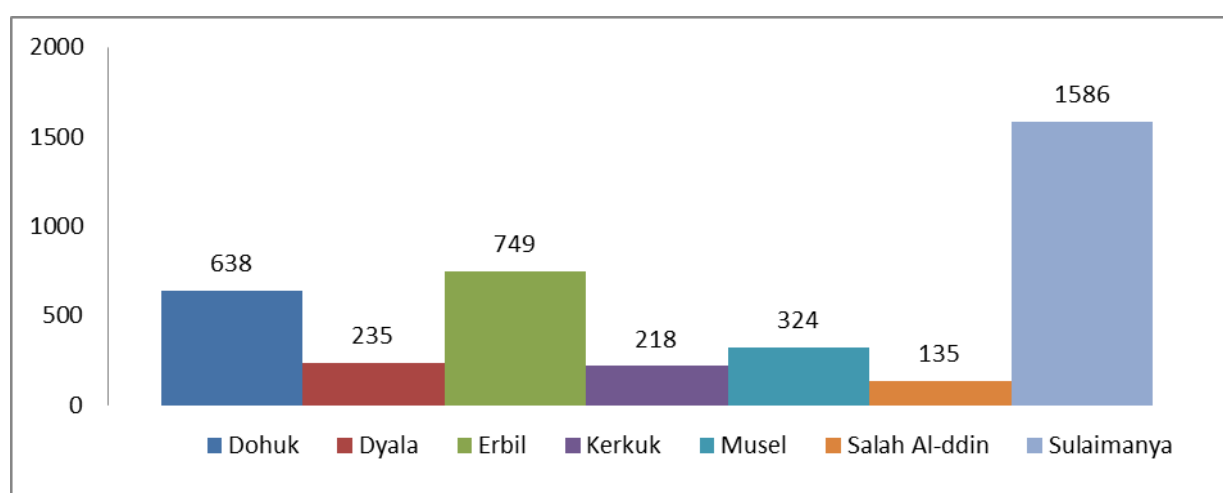
*Source: Author's own construct (2017)*

Starting with the report by Shorsh Rasool in 1991, he collected an enormous amount of data from 1970 to 1990 and summarized all of this data in a report in several categories. This includes raw data about what happened in the rural areas in the KR. This research used this report as preliminary information. However, other references have also been used in order to validate this information. The report was a hard copy, therefore, it is necessary to re-enter the entire data in order to be analysed in a form of what the study needs. The new form of the data bank has been ranked based on several categories, such as time, governorate, level of migration, types of migrations, and what happened to the people at that time. It was important to disclose the extremity of the situation because this study deals with the extreme case study.

The output of this stage was that 3,885 villages were demolished and 215,628 families were deported from 1969 to 1990 in the Kurdistan Region of Iraq. Sequentially, it appeared the size of

the demolished villages per each governorate were as follows: Sulaymania is the highest affected followed by Erbil, Dohuk, Mussel, Dyalah, Kirkuk and Salah Al-din. In the Sulaymania governorate close to 1,586 villages have been demolished, in Erbil this was 749 villages, and in Dohuk 638 villages have been demolished (see Fig-29). A question might be asked why the other governorates such as Mussel, Kirkuk, Salah-Alddin and Dyala have appeared in this calculation when they do not belong to the KR. The answer is that the Arabization process, which was applied before 1990, eviscerated a wide area of the KR and connected to Arab areas in Iraq. Therefore, a large number of the Kurdish villages have been administratively transferred to the other non-Kurdish governorates.

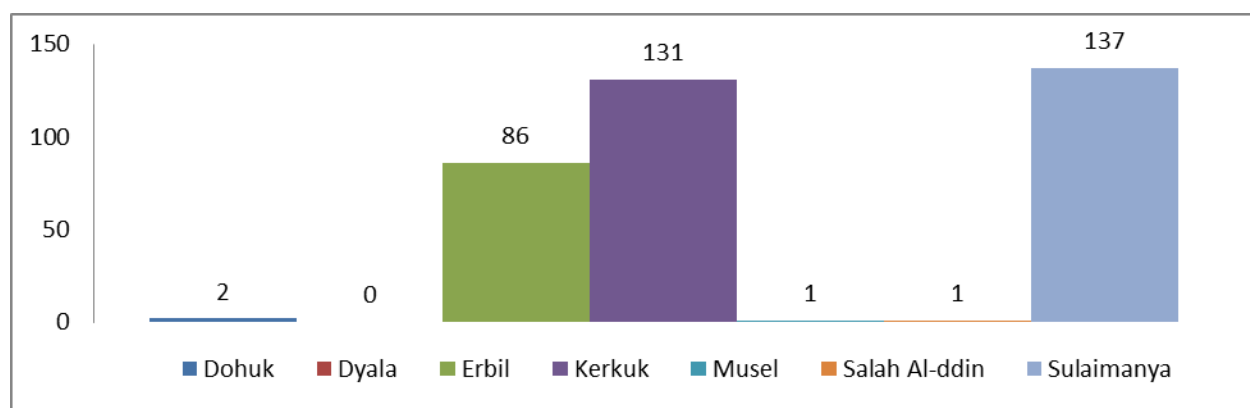
*Figure 29-Demolished villages by the governorates*



*Source: Author's own construct (2017)*

The first output of the first phase of the quantitative approach shows that the demolition occurred in all governorates at different levels. There is also a possibility for each governorate to be a case for this study. However, the other criterion, which concerns the fate of the people or villagers, must also be identified in this stage. Thus, from the first output shows that murder (genocide) had happened in 132 villages Sulaymania, 131 villages Kirkuk and in 86 villages Erbil (see Fig-30). In addition, murder occurred in a number of the villages in Dohuk (in two villages), in one village in Mussel and in one village in Salah-Alddin.

Figure 30-Murder that occurred in the villages per governorate



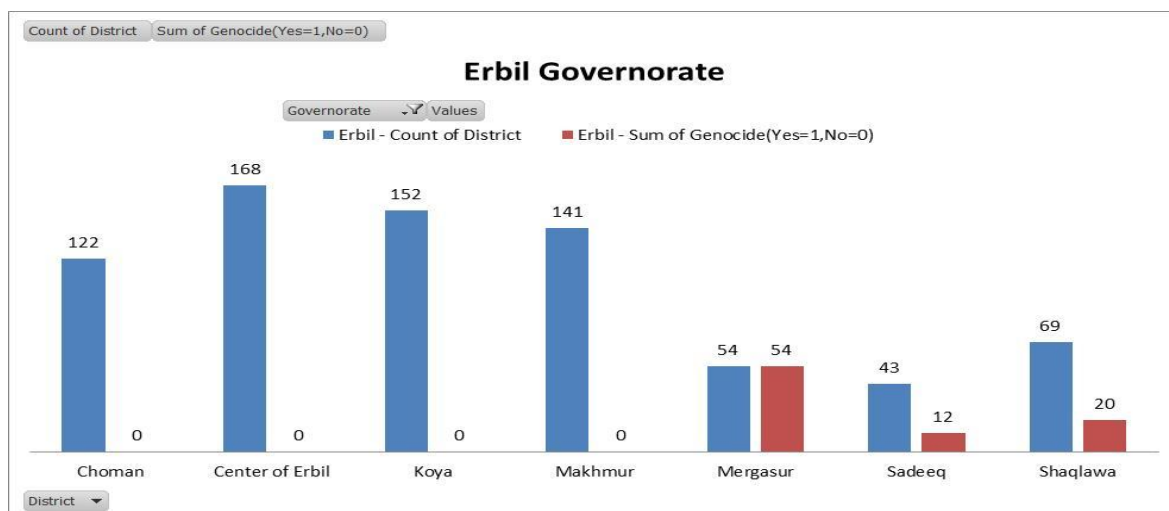
Source: Author's own construct (2017)

The first analysis leads this study to determine the governorates of Sulaymaniyah, Erbil, and Kirkuk as the best provinces to be a unit case and to represent the extremity of the situation. However, the research selection should consider the place that utilizes less time and money to complete the research. Thus, Erbil governorate was selected, based on the fact that the researcher lives there and has an extensive relationship with key individuals who can assist in this study. However, one criterion that must still be selected is which district is the best choice to be selected in the Erbil governorate. The reason for this is because, as previously mentioned, this study focuses on the meso-level, which is the level for planning.

## 4.5 Unit Selection From The Governorates

In the Erbil governorates, the demolished rural areas cover close to seven districts in the governorate of Erbil as follows: Choman (122 villages), Erbil Centre (168 villages), Koya (152 villages), Makhmur (141 villages), Mergasur (54 villages), Sadeeq (43 villages), and Shaqlawa (69 villages) (see Fig-32). Among these districts, another analysis has been done and found that the areas where villagers were killed are as follows: Mergasur (in 54 villages), Shaqlawa (in 20 villages) and Sadeeq (in 12 villages).

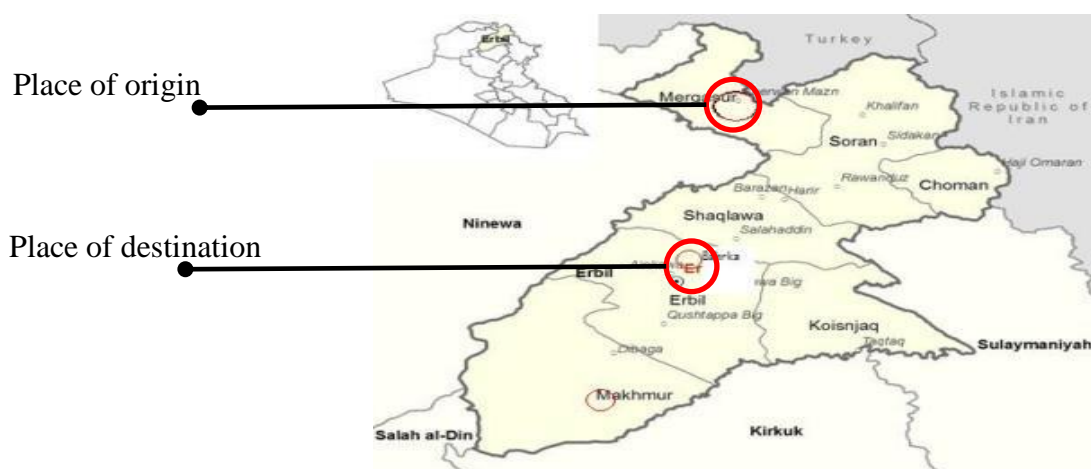
Figure 32-Erbil districts that faced demolition and murder



Source: Author's own construct (2017)

Among the extreme situation for the areas, the research selected the Mergasur district as a place of origin among the other areas, as it is an extreme unit and is relevant to these areas that faced deportation, demolition, and murder. Additionally, Mergasur has passed through the policy of the second and the third eras. Moreover, to describe the migration phenomenon, it must be discussed from the point of origin to the point of destination. For the Mergasurian<sup>34</sup> people, one of the destination places was the district of for Bahrka. Bahrka is the place of destination that has not faced any kind of deportation, demolition, or murder. It can clearly explain the reasons that have attracted people from Mergasur and can explore why the deportees remained there. These two places are approximately 135 km far from each other (see Pic-2, 3).

Picture 2- Place of origin (Mergasur) and place of destination (Bahrka)



Source: (IAU I. , 2009)

<sup>34</sup> They are people, who are or were from the Mergasur district

Picture 3-The distance between the two units



Source: (Map, 2017)

## 4.5.1 Mergasur (Place of Origin)

### 4.5.1.1 General Background

Mergasur is one of the districts of the Erbil governorate established in 1890. It has five sub-districts. These are Barzan, Piran, Sherwan-mazn, Goratu, and Mazne, and these sub-districts are administrating 252 villages. This area covers about 1,360 hectares of land and is one of the entirely demolished areas (Nabi, 2010, p. 6).

Mergasur is a place for those people who were defending and demanding Kurdish rights. The Barzani<sup>35</sup> Sheikhs were born in this region, and are those who were leading the Kurdish political and religion movements up to present day. In the early 20th century, when the villagers were suffering, Sheikh Abdulsalam Barzani resisted the Aghas and re-allocated the land to the farmers. Moreover, he forbade forced marriage, as at that time it was very common, and built a number of mosques to be as a source of education and religious issues. He became the most reliable leader to the former Aghas. After his death, his brothers took his place one by one.

This part of the study reviews the events that have passed in this area (see Tab-19). The information was brought from a book, which was published by Rekar Mzuri<sup>36</sup> (Mzuri, 2013, pp. 23-32).

<sup>35</sup> Sheikhs are the head of a tribe

<sup>36</sup> Rekar Mzuri is a voluntary active writer specialized in Kurdish genocide and persecution.

Table 19-The past events of Mergasur

| #  | Year      | Event  |
|----|-----------|--|
| 1  | 1885-1900 | 120 people were imprisoned and the head of the Barzani tribe, Sheikh Mohammed, was imprisoned; he was then deported to Rawanduz.   |
| 2  | 1913      | Barzan area has been destroyed and their inhabitants migrated to Iran.   |
| 3  | 1932-1934 | The Iraqi Air Force bombed the areas of Mzuri, Sherwan Mazn, and Barozh and destroyed 1,365 houses, equivalent to 60% of the total number of houses at the time, and returned in 1933. 400 families in Mergasur immigrated to Turkey.  |
| 4  | 1945      | British air force bombed this area and killed a large number of people. Approximately 15,000 people, including women and children, who migrated to the caves in the mountains, and 35 villages were destroyed.   |
| 5  | 1975      | After the political agreement between Iraq and Iran, the Iraqi army placed a security line on the border at a depth of 15 km inside Iraqi territory and the villages of Mzuri, Nzari and Barozh were moved and divided in Diwannya, a city in southern Iraq. In 1977, a number of those deported were repatriated to Mergasur. |
| 6  | 1978      | The Ba'athist regime deported most of the villagers to the forced compounds in Diana, Goratu, Harir, Bahrka, and Qushtapa.   |
| 7  | 1980      | Then the deportees in southern Iraq have been transferred to Qushtapa in Erbil.  |
| 8  | 1981      | Iranian air force bombed the forced compounds in Qushtapa.   |
| 9  | 1982      | The Iraqi army evacuated Sherwan Mazn.   |
| 10 | 1983      | A number of the deportees from Bahrka, Harir, and Diana escaped and fled to Iran.  |
| 11 | 1985      | Iraqi air force bombed Zewa, a refugee camp in Iran, and killed 120 women and children, all of whom were from Mergasur.  |
| 12 | 1985      | Members of the remaining families, who fled to Iran, were collected and deported to Iran.  |
| 13 | 1987      | The Iraqi army destroyed the villages in Barzan area.  |
| 14 | 1988      | Returnees, who have revived 50 villages, have left their land again to save themselves from Anfal campaigns.   |

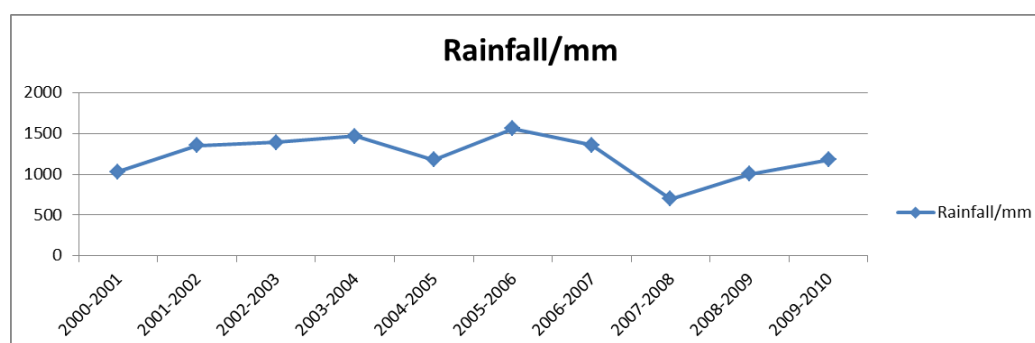
| #  | Year | Event   |
|----|------|---|
| 15 | 1990 | Mergasur district has been destroyed and their people have been transferred to the forced compounds in Shakholan-Erbil. |
| 16 | 1991 | In 1991, millions of people in the Kurdistan region emigrated to Iran and Turkey and became a refugee.                  |
| 17 | 1992 | Most of the refugees returned to the KR.  |
| 18 | 1994 | The remaining families in the forced compounds returned to their villages.  |
| 19 | 1996 | PKK centered in the Qandil mountain, and this party fought with PDK, which caused migration.                            |
| 20 | 1997 | All deportees in the Qushtapa's forced compounds returned to their villages.  |

Source: Author's own construct (2016)

#### 4.5.1.2 Economic and geographical positions

Prior to the year 1980, the agricultural sector was the main source of income in Mergasur. This area is located on the mountain and is the safest area for rainfall (see Fig-31 and Fig-32). Geographically, this area is located between the latitude 36.84040 and latitude 44.29940, and it is a mountainous area rising from sea level at around 1,180m. Farmers in this area depend on seasonal precipitation and some other springs, despite the existing two rivers, although arable land is limited. In 2014, the Ministry of Agriculture and Water Resources (MoAWR) conducted a survey in order to study and find the problems in this area. The survey showed that the people who are farming in Mergasur are made up of 7,716 farmers, which is considered a very low portion of villagers that are in farming projects (Unpublished report by MoAWR, 2014). Additionally, this area became the poorest area among the other regions of Erbil (Unit, 2013, p. 1).

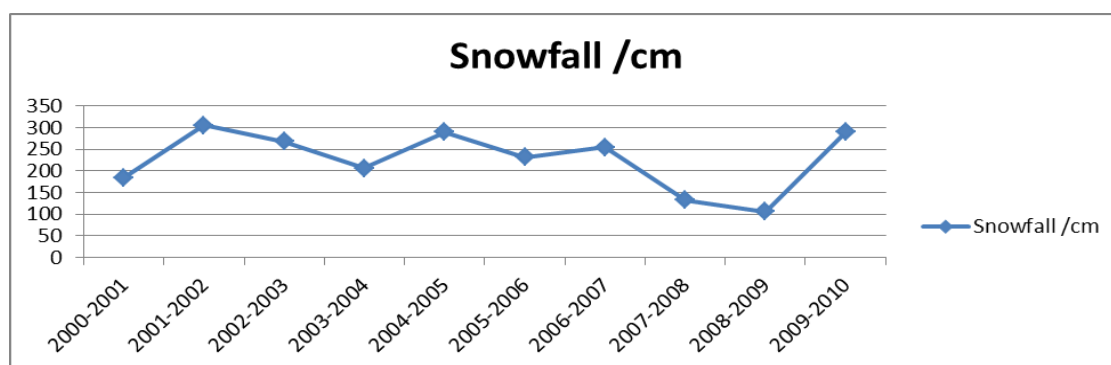
Figure 31-Annual rainfall in Mergasur



Source: Author's own construct based on the unpublished data by MoAWR (2011)



Figure 32- Annual snowfall in Mergasur

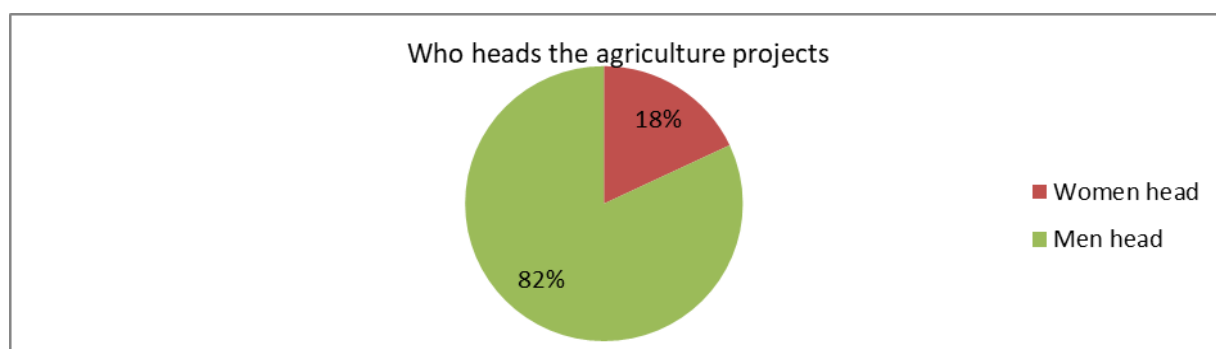


Source: Author's own construct based on the unpublished data by the MoAWR (2011)

This area has fertile soil as well. Farmers grow orchards with produce such as grapes, pomegranates, apples, pistachios, apricots, figs, almonds, and walnuts. However, other yield grains such as wheat, barley, and lentils are grown. Moreover, breeding cattle in a large number is very difficult except for goat, while goat can breed easier in the mountainous areas. Also due to the suitability of the climate, until 2010, there was a significant rise in beekeeping, and until 2010, there were 885 beekeeper breeders (Nabi, 2010, p. 8).

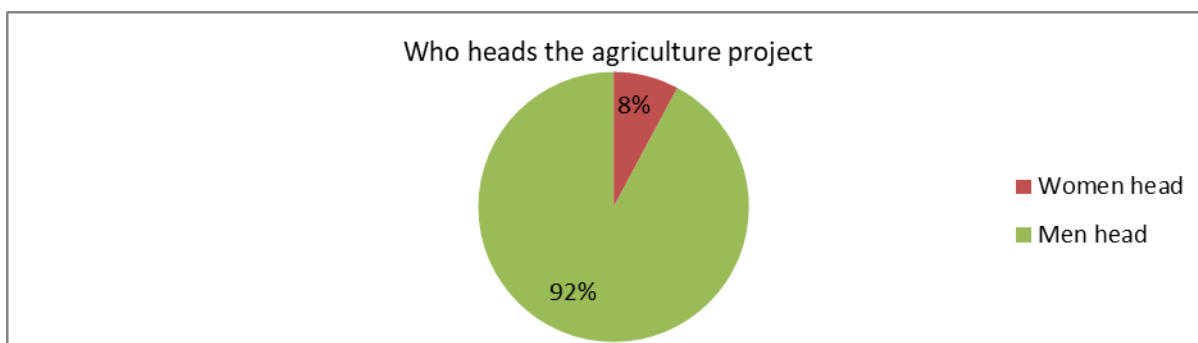
The labour force and the person who is heading the farms in this area are different from one place to another in Mergasur. In sum, the projects are run by 18% of women and 82% by men (see Fig-33). Nevertheless, this ratio regarding to each village is totally different in the other sub-districts. The gender labour force distributions of women/men are as follows: Piran 8%, Sherwan Mazn 7%, Goratu 4%, and Mazne 7%, and Barzan 41% (see Fig- 34, 35, 36, and 37).

Figure 33-Who heads the agricultural project in Mergasur



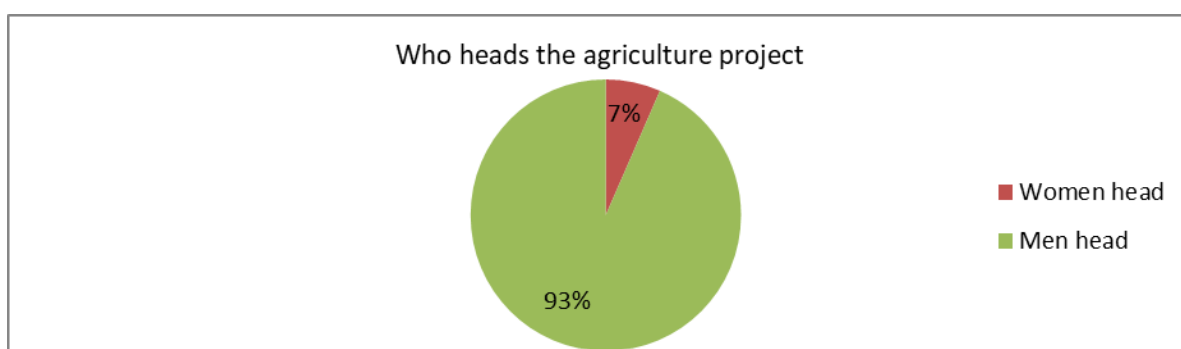
Source: Author's own construct based on the unpublished data the MoAWR (2014)

Figure 34-Ratio of women to men heading the agricultural projects in Piran



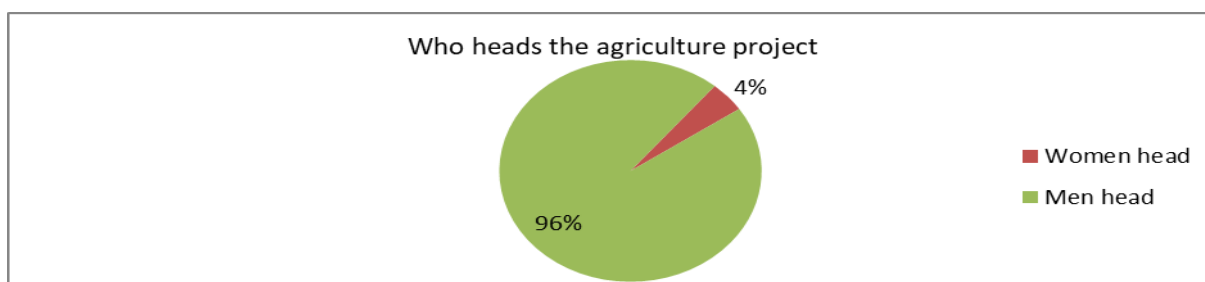
Source: Author's own construct based on the unpublished data the MoAWR (2014)

Figure 35-Ratio of women to men heading the agriculture projects in Sherwan Mazn



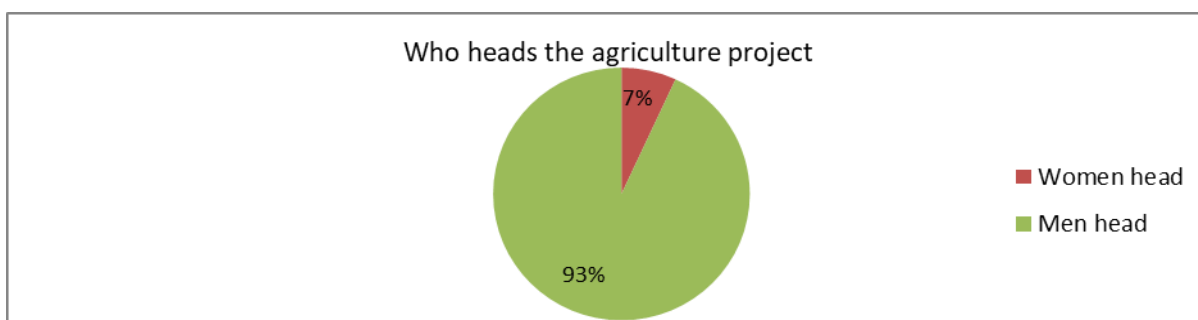
Source: Author's own construct based on the unpublished data the MoAWR (2014)

Figure 36-Ratio of women to men heading the agriculture projects in Goratu



Source: Author's own construct based on the unpublished data the MoAWR (2014)

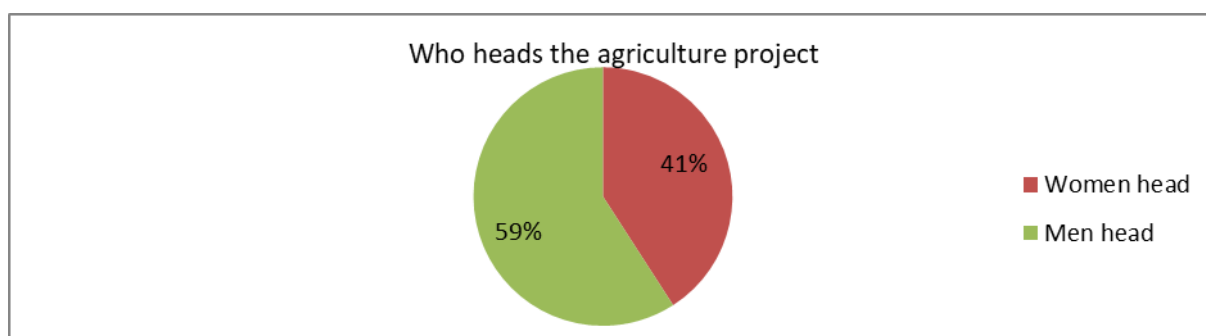
Figure 37-Ratio of women to men heading the agricultural projects in Mazne



Source: Author's own construct based on the unpublished data the MoAWR (2014)

However, there is an interesting ratio in Barzan. In this sub-district, the proportion of women to men in terms of who heads projects is 41% to 59% (see Fig-38). There are three explanations for this. The first is that the Anfal operation (mass murder) may have decreased the proportion of males. Another explanation may be that the female gender was born more than the males or those males may do another job. With regard to the Ministry of Interior database of the Kurdistan Regional Government, which is an unpublished report, it was found that the genders born were almost equal. Therefore, the two other options of murder and the different jobs will be under discussion.

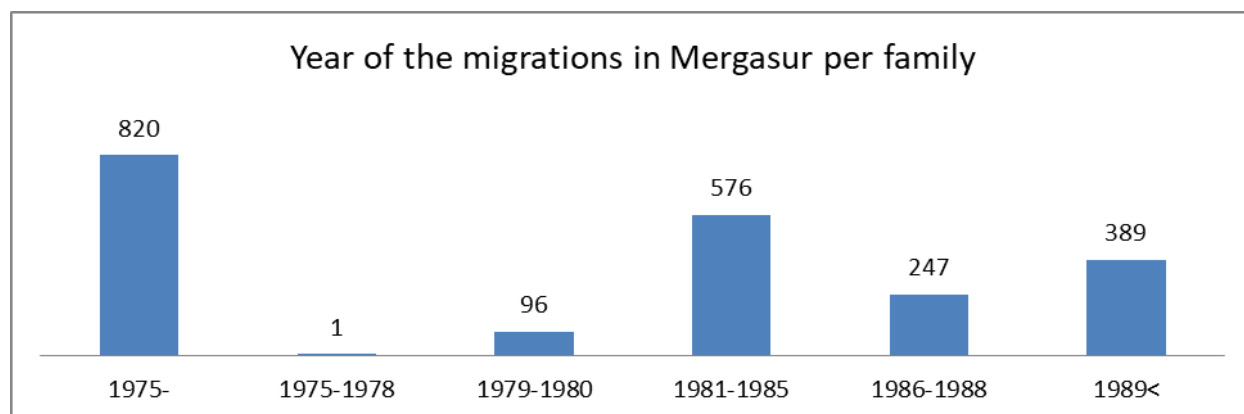
Figure 38-Ratio of women to men heading the agricultural projects in Barzan



Source: Unpublished report by MoAWR (2014)

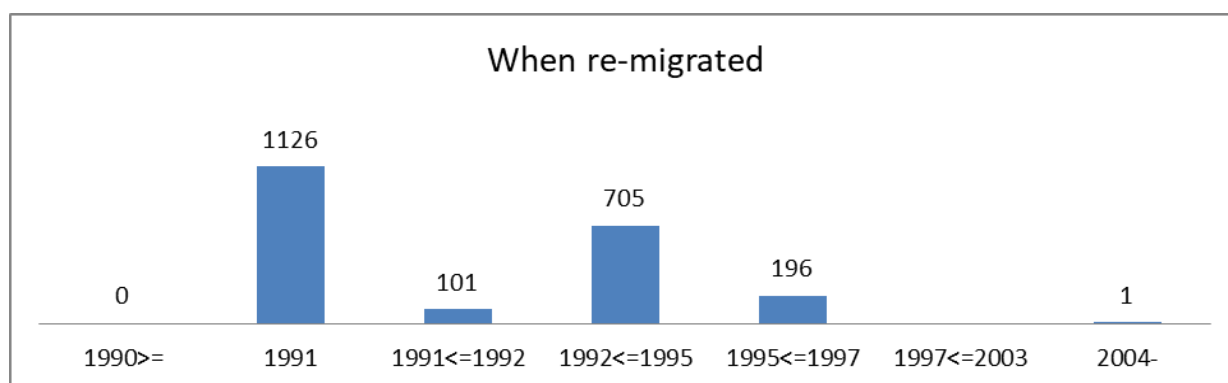
As already identified, people in this area have been deported several times. Between 1974 and 1989, a number of families remained in the Erbil governorate and a few could cross the border, but approximately 2,129 families migrated to Iran (see Fig-39). In 1991, these families began to return to their homeland group by group. However, as shown in Figure 44, the large group was at the beginning of 1991 (see Fig-40). The period of migration was dissimilar, but on average the minimum year of staying in Iran was five years, and the maximum was more than 20 (see Fig-41).

Figure 39- The migrated families in a certain period



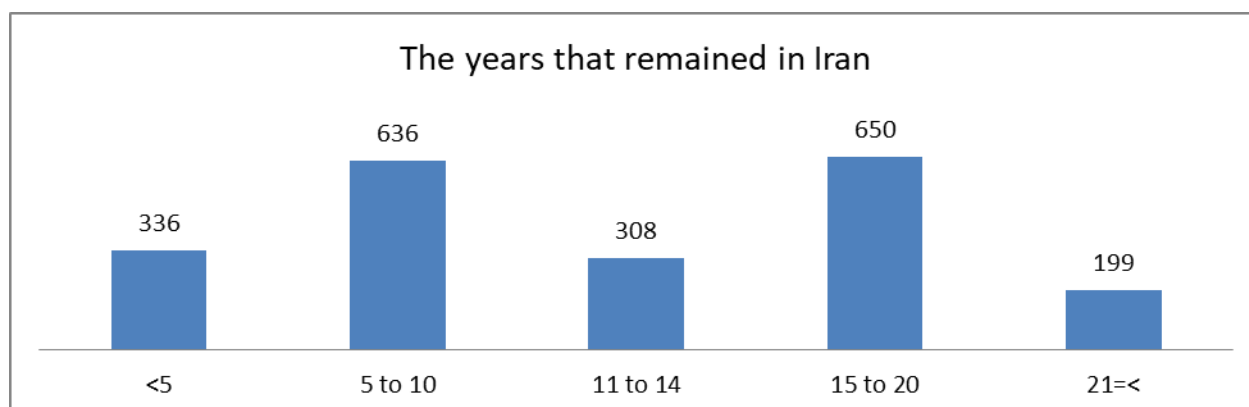
Source: Author's own construct from the unpublished source by MoI (2016)

Figure 40- Year of returning from Iran to the KR



Source: Author's own construct from the unpublished source by MoI (2016)

Figure 41- Years of staying in Iran



Source: Author's own construct from the MoI unpublished source (2016)

#### 4.5.1.3 Research and population

In general form, population is defined as a number of people in a restricted area or anyone living in a country (Denscombe, 2010, p. 23). However, the population for this study is the number of people from a district that are considered as the extreme units, and specifically in the districts of Mergasur and Bahrka. This study is bounded from 1970 to 2015. Hence, to employ people from Mergasur there is a demand for a census to calculate the sample number and size.

For almost 30 years, no census has been conducted in Iraq and in the Kurdistan Region of Iraq. Lack of data and information is a major problem; it is very difficult to obtain accurate information on a particular subject in Iraq (Iraq, 2014, p. 2). Similarly, the official census of Mergasur was not available, neither from the district administration nor from the Central Statistical Agency. However, fortunately, the researcher collected some raw data from some sources that helped to calculate the population prediction for 2015 in Mergasur.

There were diverse data sources of Mergasur. In an academic study conducted by Muhammad in 2005, the total population of Mergasur is stated as being 40,139 people. According to his

calculation, the annual population rate of increase will be 4.9% (Mohammed, 2005, p. 3). Similarly, the ratio between rural and urban areas was 67 to 33. Regarding this calculation, in 2015 the population in Mergasur was around 61,906 people (see Tab-20). It seems that Muhammad had the same problem of the census, because he did not cite any reference to this data.

*Table 20-Predicted total population of Mergasur from 2004-2015 based on Mohammed's calculation*

| Year   | 2004   | 2005   | 2006   | 2007   | 2008   | 2009   | 2010   | 2011   | 2012   | 2013   | 2014   | 2015   |
|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|
| Person | 40,139 | 42,118 | 44,097 | 46,076 | 48,054 | 50,033 | 52,012 | 53,991 | 55,970 | 57,949 | 59,928 | 61,906 |

*Source: Author's own construct (2016)*

Another source from the Department of Statistics in Erbil in 2009 announced that the rate of population growth in Mergasur is 4.59. With regard to this percentage, the population in 2015 could reach 56,499 people (see Tab-21).

*Table 21-Predicted total population of Mergasur from 2004-2015 based on the Erbil Gov. calculation*

| Year   | 2009   | 2010   | 2011   | 2012   | 2013   | 2014   | 2015   |
|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|
| Person | 44,299 | 46,332 | 48,366 | 50,399 | 52,432 | 54,466 | 56,499 |

*Source: Author's own construct adopted from the EGSD (2016)*

However, the Kurdistan Region Statistics Office (KRSO) announced that the population of Mergasur in 2015 is 52,178, and, moreover, that the population growth will be 3.4 annually (see Tab-22).

*Table 22-Predicted total population of Mergasur from 2004-2015 based on the KRSO*

| Year   | 2009   | 2010   | 2011   | 2012   | 2013   | 2014   | 2015   |
|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|
| Person | 44,299 | 45,582 | 46,873 | 48,169 | 49,486 | 50,824 | 52,178 |

*Source: (KRSO, 2015)*

Furthermore, in 2003, FAO referred also to another reference of the population in Mergasur. This organization calculated the population of this district as 17,728. This is arguably a very trusted data source because the FAO was at the time supporting villages, and every villager tried to register his name. For this reason, this survey had good representation of the villagers. In addition, the FAO worked hard to obtain accurate data. Thus, this study takes the population data of FAO in 2003. In addition to the population growth, this study uses its own finding of the population rate, which was 5.2. Then the expected population of Mergasur in 2015 will be about 28,790 people (see Tab-23). It should be noted that the rural-urban ratio in Mergasur in 2010 was

13% (Statistic KRG, 2010), and the labour force was approximately 61% (Mohammed, 2005, p. 4). Therefore, the number would be deducted by 2,382 people. The resulting number is the sample of the population which is used in this study (see Tab-24).

*Table 23-Predicted total population of Mergasur from 2004-2015 based on the researcher's pre-survey*

| Year   | 2004   | 2005   | 2006   | 2007   | 2008   | 2009   | 2010   | 2011   | 2012   | 2013   | 2014   | 2015   |
|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|
| Person | 18,650 | 19,572 | 20,494 | 21,415 | 22,337 | 23,259 | 24,181 | 25,103 | 26,025 | 26,947 | 27,868 | 28,790 |

*Source: Author's own construct (2016)*

*Table 24-Prediction of the Mergasur population in 2015*

| Year  | Population in 2015 |
|---|--------------------|
| Population  | 28,790             |
| Labour force (0.61) (Mohammed, 2005, p. 4)                | 3,915              |
| Rural/Urban ratio (0.13) (Governorate, www.hawlergov.org) | 2,388              |

*Source: Author's own construct (2016)*

## 4.5.2 Bahrka

Bahrka is one of the five destination places for the people of Mergasur. So far, a large number of ex-deportees are living in this sub-district, and they can be considered as eyewitnesses for the events and as interviewees. Another advantage of this area is that this area has faced no kind of demolition, deportation, or murder, and can represent a normal rural area.

This sub-district belongs to the central administration of Erbil. It was a village, but on 26 December 2007, this area became an official sub-district of 30 villages and six forced compounds (Governorate, Erbil city center, 2001). It is located in the north of Erbil and 10 km away from the city centre. It is a rural area with about 43,000 people. Most of the people in this sub-district were engaged in agricultural projects and some of them were in public administration (Baxewan, 2008).

## 4.6 Sampling and Sample

The research sample refers to the part of the selected population that has been chosen to be a part of a study (Denscombe, 2010, p. 23). In other words, it is a segment or a subset of the research population that has been selected to participate in the research (Bryman, 2012). The aim of the sample selection is to achieve two things. It will help to get a representative sample or to get an exploratory sample (Denscombe, 2010, p. 24). Each one has a different approach and tries to be associated with different types of social research.

### 1- Quantitative Sampling and Sample

This part, as described, is divided into two parts. The first step is for finding the units, which is completed and is followed by a step to test the hypotheses in the conceptual framework. In a cross-section representative sample from the sample population, a questionnaire form based on the Likert scale with five degrees was distributed in order to conduct the survey. This study matches the population in terms of its diversity and relies on using a selection procedure that (Denscombe, 2010, p. 24):

- includes all relevant factors/variables/events, and
- matches the proportions in the overall population

Therefore, the population was carefully and systematically reduced to the representative number. The sample optimization in this study will use a number of criteria to divide necessary and unnecessary elements. In the Kurdish society, mostly men have power<sup>37</sup>. However, the research tried to break this wall and thus involved all the segments of society. Therefore, to reach all strata of society, the sample was taken by 50% of males and 50% of females based on the reason that the gender structure in Mergasur is 52/48 per 100 persons (Author's pre-survey, 2014). The forms were distributed systematically as follows.

The estimated population of Mergasur in 2015 was 2,388, and then this number of people will go through another deduction by the formula of Krejcie and Morgan (Krejcie & Morgan, 1970):

$$s = \frac{X^2 * N * P * (1 - P)}{d^2 * (N - 1) + X^2 * P * (1 - P)}$$

s= required sample size

X<sup>2</sup>= the table value of chi-square for 1 degree of freedom at the desired confidence level (3.841)

N= the population size (2,388)

P= the population proportion (assumed to be .50 since this would provide the maximum sample size.

d= the degree of accuracy expressed as a proportion (0.05)

Therefore,

$$s = \frac{(3.84 * 2,388 * 0.5) * (1 - 0.5)}{((0.05)^2 * (2,388 - 1) + (3.841 * 0.5 * (1 - 0.5)))}$$

s=330 (to simplify this number will be divided on two)

Thus, 330 persons were sample population who must be reached in the questionnaire process. As explained previously, the people in Mergasur are divided into two parts, from origin and destination places. Therefore, 165 people were interviewed in Mergasur and 165 in Bahrka. Moreover, migration is an issue that relates to several social categories and the quota sampling is a

---

<sup>37</sup> Men's social identity is defined by the power they have over women and the power they can compete for against other men (Pleck, Understanding Patriarchy and Men's Power, 2017).

technique, which deals with heterogeneous population (Alvi, 2016, p. 31). Thus, in this study, the population distribution was arranged with a quota sampling for each social category, such as gender, age, and marital status, for the purpose of giving an equal chance for each representative segment about their perspective on policy and migration or income. Hence, the population sample is divided as follows (see Tab- 25 and 26):

*Table 25-Sample Size in Mergasur (from the origin place)*

| Mergasur       |       |        |
|----------------|-------|--------|
| Age            | Male  | Female |
| >=18 unmarried | 42    | 40     |
| >=18 married   | 42    | 41     |
|                | 84    | 81     |
|                | Total | 165    |

*Source: Author's own construct (2016)*

*Table 26-Number of the person in Bahrka (from the destination place)*

| Bahrka         |       |        |
|----------------|-------|--------|
| Age            | Male  | Female |
| >=18 unmarried | 42    | 40     |
| >=18 married   | 42    | 41     |
|                | 84    | 81     |
|                | Total | 165    |

*Source: Author's own construct (2016)*

## 2- Qualitative Sampling and Sample

The qualitative section employed two segments of people using two techniques of in-depth interview and expert interview, for the people Mergasur and the policy-makers for the rural area. The questions in the in-depth interview gather data from individuals about their practices, beliefs, or opinions. However, it can also be used to gather information about past or current experiences (Harrell & Bradley, 2009, p. 24). With this technique, we can obtain different kinds of data (Harrell & Bradley, 2009, p. 24) such as:

1. Gathering opinions, perceptions, attitudes
2. Gathering background information
3. Expert knowledge
4. Facts, descriptions of processes
5. Some interviews may include aspects of both, past and present



The people of Mergasur were asked about the past events and the cause for migration. This data collection includes several criteria. This step does not include those who are mentally ill, children, or the very ill. In addition, there is no interest to describe any events before 1970. For the people of Mergasur, there two groups. The first group will be those people who migrated from Mergasur and are now living far from this area. The second group are those people who migrated but returned to their areas in Mergasur. The qualitative question will be asked of why some of these people are returned, and the others are not?

Furthermore, during the first pre-data gathering, it was found that the people in Mergasur are very conservative. Hence, a first contact was used to gain the next. With the snowball technique from a few well-known people in Mergasur, a network was developed with more people. These are chosen selectively as this sampling technique is non-probabilistic. From one person, a series of upcoming interviews come one by one and that is exactly what this study needed. The planned number for interviewing, which was assumed to be in this particular section, is 60 people, 30 in Mergasur and 30 in Bahrka.

The last part of the qualitative approach used the technique of expert interview, and addressed those people who are or were formulating policy for rural areas in the Kurdistan Region. For rural sustainable development, several directorates have direct relations with the issue. These are the Ministry of Agriculture and Water Resources, Ministry of Municipality and Tourism, the Investment Board and the Agriculture Department of Mergasur. In addition, the relevant people are questioned with semi-structured questions. The numbers of interviewees for the qualitative sections is not fixed.

## **4.7 Data Collection Approach**

As it has been organized in the research design, data was gathered sequentially in four phases (see Fig-27). In the first phase, which was the first quantitative stance, the units for the case have been selected by using the archival method. After the unit selection, this process follows by another quantitative stance through the use of questionnaires. The last phase, which is the third stance is qualitative data collection, through which data will be collected by using interview guides. A part of the questions are triangulated in the both quantitative and qualitative phases in order to distinguish the answers from the approaches.

### **4.7.1 Quantitative Archival**

The archival method in this study was a process of collecting a number of documents that related to the past events in the rural areas in the Kurdistan Region. These documents included those from

the governmental institutions, academic papers, and articles from a number international and local journals. This process could help this stance by giving a wide view of the migration causes and the fate of the people in these areas, as it has been already clarified .

### **4.7.2 Quantitative Questionnaires**

After the unit selection, another quantitative approach, which was questionnaires, followed to complete the process. This questionnaire was constructed from a set of questions in order to answer a number of research questions and at the same time to validate the hypotheses, which have been constructed in the conceptual framework. All the questions are used to cover all variables or concepts in the conceptual framework, which are mostly relevant to people or villagers' needs, governmental policies, market and income. In addition, in this part, 165 villagers were inquired equally by the same questionnaire form in Mergasur and Bahrka (see Appendix-1). These people gave their point of view about the necessity of the capital assets and accessibility; however, they are giving their perspective about the governmental performance and their positions regarding income and migration.

The questionnaire form consisted of three main question groups. The first and second groups focused on the necessity of the capital assets (natural, social, human, physical and financial) and their impacts to the market for achieving a satisfactory income. These questions were for testing the level of availability of these assets and to get to know the villagers awareness about these assets. Moreover, these questions have been linked to the role of the governmental policies on the level of accessibility to the market. Of course not all the segments of the society have the same connection to the market; therefore, the output of the gathered data will give a correct decision about the most affected segment. In addition, this group of questions did not miss the NGOs' roles in the whole process, as these organizations are having an impactful role whether they have brought positive impact or not in this area.

The third question group comes to the core point, which is migration. The first question is very direct, and it asks when someone has not obtained his satisfactory income, what will he do? Does he leave his place and seek for his income, wherever it was? And where will he go?

The whole questions go through a five grades Likert Scale. The responses are categorised from strongly agree to strongly disagree, with strongly disagree assigned a value of 1 through to 5, for strongly agree (strongly agree=1, agree = 2, neutral = 3, disagree = 4, and strongly disagree = 5).

After the collection of the forms, these data were be organized in the SPSS program, and then were analysed. The first step was to disclose the factors that have pulled villagers to stay in

Bahrka, and the push factors that motivated villagers to leave Mergasur. The next step for the analysis is to explain the extent and effect of income on migration. In addition, this includes exploring the most relative segment with the local market or market in general, and how the governmental policies have provided this space of reaction, and what is the level of the villager's satisfaction.

### 4.7.3 Qualitative Interviewee

As previously mentioned, this study has another approach, and it is a qualitative approach. In this stance the method of the in-depth interviews and the expert interviews consisted of face-to-face interviews. In-depth interviewing is *“a qualitative research technique that involves conducting intensive individual interviews with a small number of respondents to explore their perspectives on a particular idea, program, or situation (Boyce & Neale, 2006, p. 3)”*. This method can be complementarily used with the quantitative methods, and at the same time it provides people a kind of good atmosphere to talk about their opinion on a certain issue (Boyce & Neale, 2006, p. 3).

In this study, there was a need to have answers for the qualitative research questions, that are related to the push and pull factors in both origin and destination places and, moreover, to explore the level of satisfactory income. Last but not the least, the research aimed to explore the level of the satisfaction of these people about the governmental policies, and how all of these issues impacted migration decision making. For this purposes, a number of questions were formulated within the constructed conceptual framework (see Appendix-12 and 14).

Another part of the qualitative method is for the expert interview. The expert interviewees in this study are for the policy-makers, who participated in demonstration of policies for the rural area. This group of people can narrate the case study and tell us about the managerial problems (Kothari, 2004, p. 113). In the KR there are some ministries that are directly connected to the rural services, such ministries as Ministry of Agriculture and Water Resources, Ministry of Municipality, and the High Investment Board. A set of questions was administered about demonstrating and disciplines of the policy, and how the policy-makers are aware of the perspective of the villagers (see Appendix-16). For qualitative methods, the questions are designed in a mixed pattern, for the core question I am using the open-ended pattern, and for the sub-questions I am using the close-ended pattern. Furthermore, all of the interviews were voice-recorded.

#### 4.7.4 Coding of the Qualitative Data

The findings of the qualitative methods are much different and more difficult than quantitative methods. Researchers after his or her fieldwork will get a massive amount of data and all must be organized, summarized and changed to reasonable topics. Therefore, these data must be brought under certain categories to be understood, which is often conducted in a process called coding. The coding is a process of both data reduction and data analysis (Kniggeô & Cope, 2006, S. 2025). The coding process has three purposes (Cope, 2016):

1. Data reduction: It helps the researcher to deal with a large amount of data
2. Organization: It helps the researcher to sort the collected data
3. Substantive process: It helps the researcher to explore, analyzing and theory-building

Through this process content was analyzed in order to identify the terms and phrases or actions in the data, which sometimes is accomplished by hand or by computer (Cope, 2016, S. 282). This content analysis accounts the replicable words or messages in different contexts when these words or messages can be set as code and then sorted as a “*Manifest*” or “*Latent*” codes (Cope, 2016, S. 282). Mostly, the codes are used qualitatively, and the manifest and latent codes in parallel describe and analyze the codes. The descriptive codes are reflecting themes and form that are related directly to the research subject (Cope, 2016, S. 283). In this study, the coding approach is the concept driven coding, it drives through the concepts and variables within the constructed conceptual framework.

#### 4.7.5 Types of Coding

In this study, coding was done for the texts or words that are being heard from the interviewees during the fieldwork, and each text or word is transcribed from the recorded voice from the fieldwork. The transcription is constructed from the main variables or the sub-variables from the conceptual framework (see Fig-26); however, detailed expression of these codes are from the interviewees themselves. As they have been constructed, the concepts or variables are governmental policy, social capital, physical capital, security, human capital, natural capital, and market space (see Tab-27).

Table 27- Transcription rules

| Text  | Variables Connections  |
|---|------------------------|
| Type of work or work location   | Income                 |
| “I have land or not” or “I have water for drinking or for the project” or “I like the view of my area” or “ it is my or my father’s land” or “ I am | Natural capital assets |

| Text   | Variables Connections    |
|--|--------------------------|
| not selling my land”   |                          |
| “Infrastructure for living or for the project” or “anything about the availability of electricity, water, road, school or health building and etc. | Physical capital assets  |
| Money for living or for project  | Financial capital assets |
| Networks among families or groups or community   | Social capital assets    |
| The quality and the number of people in a way of education, skill, qualification, health and the size of these in this area                        | Human capital assets     |
| “Imported, exported, price of the product” or “Market is good or not”  | Market problem           |
| Government policies, regulation, performance, subsidizing, facilities  | Government performance   |

*Source: Author’s own construct (2019)*

## 4.8 Data Management and Analysis

Managing data is a core issue for conducting a research interview (Boyce & Neale, 2006, p. 4). A researcher will know his or her path regarding time and activity, and he or she gives him- or herself a chance to evaluate and develop the questions in each step. This study was somehow complex because it should concentrate on people who are from Mergasur as origin, and they have returned once or not, or the returned and they are currently living there. Hence, data management passed through several criteria to keep its internal and external validity.

### 4.8.1 Management of Quantitative Data

To the research tested the questionnaire form first to reformulate whether there was missing information. With a help of a friend from Bahrka, in January 2019, some forms were and after receiving they were analysed with the SPSS program. The first shot of the results was not very proper because some of the questions were not easily understandable by the people. Therefore, they were reformulated in an easier to understand manner, and then the questionnaires were distributed again. The distribution process was lunched in the same period to save some time in the places of Bahrka and Mergasur. As it had been planned for 165 forms for each place, but this number was raised to 170, just in case when some responses will not fit the questions, they will be disregarded. Just for more explanation, the questions were formulated based on two aspects, on the one hand, they should reflect the quantitative research questions and on the other hand, should be understandable by the respondents in order to gain valuable responses and reach the study goals (see Appendix-1).

In the beginning of April 2019, all the forms were collected. Among the all forms, 165 forms were extracted, and the rest were removed because the answers were not compatible with the questions.

### **4.8.2 Management of Qualitative Data**

Data was gathered first from Mergasur before Bahrka because it was easier to make contact. There was a need to practice the formulated questions for the qualitative part. This meant practice in a way to agree with some of the qualitative research questions and to be practicable by the interviewees. First, some questions were dropped out to see the reflection, and then the same concept was developed until the constructed questions were reached (see Appendix- 8). The questions were constructed to clarify and reveal the events that happened during the Anfal operation in order to clarify the consequence, and were aimed to understand the migration attitude of the people in both places of origin and destination.

The first interview was made in Dec. 2019, and was with a farmer, and then the other interviewees followed. As mentioned previously, the snowballing technique was very helpful for this part. One by one, definite appointments were made with each interviewee. The qualitative phase covered a diverse age of people who are currently living in Mergasur or who are living in Bahrka. This stance respects all of the society layers, and among them those who lived with the events in 1975 as well as the newborns in order to know their perspectives about migration and re-migration, income satisfaction and life needs.

This phase was another half of the data comparison, because at the end of this process, the information could be triangulated with the results from the quantitative analysis. Then after the analysis of the data, the information was presented and discussed with individuals in government who have a direct influence on the rural issues or problems, and these people were chosen based on their task and specific responsibilities. Therefore, there is another qualitative stance, and these were the expert interviews. The experts are those people who are or were participating or executing governmental policies. For this purpose a set of questions was formulated to guide the expert interviews (see Appendix-16).

## **CHAPTER FIVE: FINDINGS**

### **5.1 The Impacts of Demolitions From the Anfal Operations**

The size of the demolition from the Anfal operations was previously described in chapter four. The description showed that close to 3,885 villages were demolished and 215,628 families were deported in the Kurdistan Region of Iraq. The demolished villages for each governorate were as follows: in the Sulaymania governorate close to 1,586 villages were demolished; in Erbil this was 749 villages; and in Dohuk 638 villages were demolished. This has been surveyed by the first quantitative part of the analysis. Another part of the analysis provides the description of the influences of these operations on the villager's lives in Mergasur and Bahrka. This has been qualitatively analysed from the interview content in order to understand in detail what happened there and how these changes impacted their lives.

#### **5.1.1 Impacts in Mergasur**

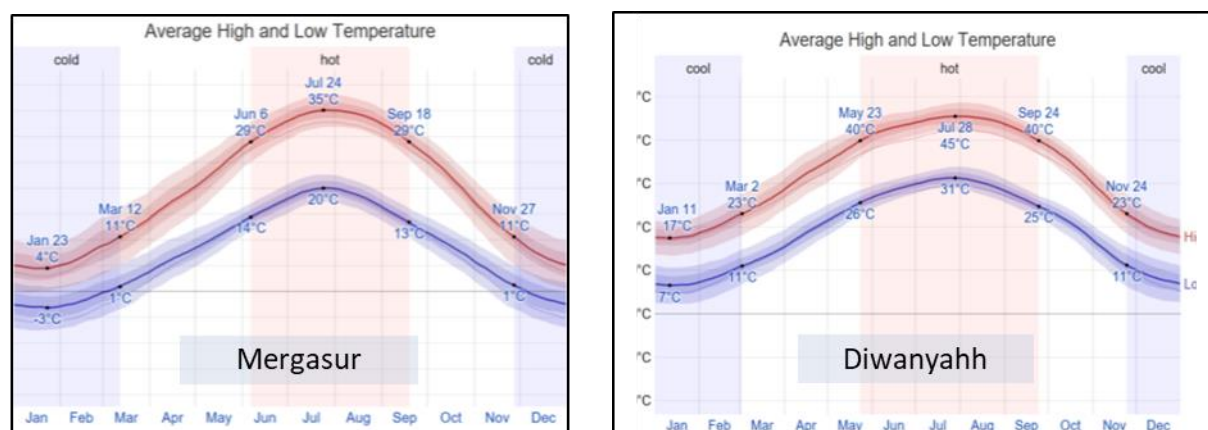
The demolitions and in parallel the deportations began in Mergasur from the middle of October until December 1975. These people were deported to locations which were more than 500 km away from their origin places (see Appendix -13- Interviewee No. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6 and 8). Among these places were Diwanyah, Sammawa, and Hitt. They are three governorates, which are located in the south of Iraq. For reference, the north and the south of Iraq are very different in many ways. For example, people in these regions are Arabs and the majority of them are Shiaa<sup>38</sup>. In addition, the climate and specifically the temperature is always 9 to 10 C<sup>0</sup> different from Mergasur (see Fig-42). The deportees at that time were not able to speak Arabic and all of them were Sunni. It is well-known that the Shiaa and Sunni are two beliefs in Islam that tend to have conflict with each other. Besides the two previous problems, these deported people were treated and served very poorly. As they said, they were receiving bad food, salty and unsafe drinking water<sup>39</sup>, and they were treated as a prisoner of war by the Iraqi military. These factors resulted in the death of hundreds of the children and elderly persons. After five years of these operations, they were transferred to other forced compounds around the city of Erbil. The other deportees from the other areas of four governorates of Duhok, Sulaimanya and Kirkuk were transferred to forced compounds near to each governorate.

---

<sup>38</sup> The Muslim are divided into Religious doctrine to Sunni and Shiaa

<sup>39</sup> The drinking water in the south of Iraq is salty, people must buy swear water in the market

Figure 42- Climate difference in Mergasur and Diwanyahh



Source: (Spark, 2019)

This situation changed in 1991. In this year, Saddam Hussains' Regime was thrown out from the Kurdistan Region, which was a start for a new day. This opened opportunities for the villagers to return to their villages to revitalize their origin places. Several campaigns by several organisations, such as UNICEF and a number of the NGOs with the KRG coordinated people's return. These organisations helped and provided them with some construction materials to rebuild their houses, and also gave a number of livestock to each family. However, subsidizing these resources still left many needs unmet. For example they could not provide all what was necessary for life such as electricity, a piped water network, roads for transportation, among other needs. Moreover, in Mergasur there was another issue, which was far from demolition and it was the existence of the PKK<sup>40</sup>. The PKK has controlled and evacuated about 400 villages in the KR (Ali, 2019), and specifically more than 40 villages in Mergasur. Since 1991, the PKK was existing and growing in this area. To save its position, it was pulling people to join them or requiring people to leave the area. The PKK was fighting against the Turkish Government and in 1994 the Turkish military began bombarding this area from time to time. The insufficient essential needs and the Turkish-PKK threats pushed the villagers to migrate again. A part of them migrated to the centre of Mergasur, Goratu, and Mazne<sup>41</sup>, and the other part returned to Bahrka or to the center of Erbil (see Appendix -13- Interviewee No. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6,7,8,9 and 10).

All of these migrations had significant impact on the villagers as described in the next several sub-sections:

#### 5.1.1.1 Work culture

In general, most of these people are currently doing different jobs from their original backgrounds. In this area, farming was in two sectors. These are plant production and animal

<sup>40</sup> It is a political Kurdish party from Turkey, which is against the Turkish government

<sup>41</sup> They are sub-districts from Mergasur



breeding; however, there were villagers who were doing both. The plant farmers were planting wheat, barley, chickpea and lentil crops and the orchard farmers were growing grape, apple, pear, pistachio, almonds, and pomegranate. The crop farmers were doing this job in order to secure food for themselves and their families and animals. They were using wheat to make flour and to make bread, and were also using chickpea and lentil, and saving the rest for the next seasons or year. They were having a kind of annual balance of consumption and production. Moreover, from the orchard yields, orchard farmers were consuming some for eating and drying or conserving in a way of making marmalade for the next seasons or year and were selling a part.

The animal breeders were breeding cattle, goat, cows, and poultry. Similarly, the animal breeders were consuming and saving the raw crops to make fodder. They were harvesting the yields at the production season, between May and June, and were saving for October until March. Those who were living on the flat land were breeding sheep, and those who were on the mountain areas were breeding goat because sheep cannot be bred in a sharp downhill and uphill location.

#### 5.1.1.2 Family size

The general trend of these groups of people is towards having a big family and marrying at a young age. It is very rare to find someone after the age of 35 who is not married. Before 1975, the big family was for doing farming. However, now most of them are not doing farming, but human losses from the Anfal operations was a factor to have several children. Most of the interviewees had someone who had been lost in the Anfal (see Appendix -13- 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6 and 8), and having children is a kind of indemnity for their former human losses. The average family size is about 6.5 (see Appendix 12). This growth in the family has caused a problem as well. When before a small plot of land was providing the family's needs, now the same family became bigger and this piece of land can not bring proper income to support all family members.

#### 5.1.1.3 Education level

These people have currently a variety of education levels when before most of them were illiterate or could only read and write. The people above age 45 are mostly illiterate or can read and write and few among them have finished high school (see Appendix -13-1, 6 and 7). However, the children and the younger persons, less than 45, have mostly finished high school, and some of them have finished university or have a diploma. In contrast to its negative impacts, deportation has had positive impacts in terms of education levels. Furthermore, the level of education is not related to the farming job, which was previously the main form of employment.

## 5.1.2 Impacts in Bahrka

After May 1978, the villagers from Mergasur were forced and transported by military trucks (see Appendix -14- Interviewee No. 1-6 and 8-10). Without any former announcement, they were all immediately captured in a week, and then were transported to camps in Bahrka and became deportees. The military did not let these people bring their stuff during the deportation, except a few kilos of food such as a few kilos of rice, flour or some dried fruits and several pieces of clothes. After a few months, the military registered and then distributed them to non-finished houses near to the Bahrka centre. The government promised good compensation for their losses at that time with. However, according to the interviewees, this process was very non-systematic and unfair. Some of them had received good compensation, and the rest were very unsatisfied. Regardless of the family size, they received equally a non-finished house with 200m<sup>2</sup>, which was built of clay and stones. This house included two rooms with an open toilet.

This was not the only operation against these deportees. On July 1983, the Iraqi army operated another campaign and took the males between 12 to above 70 years old, and none of them returned. These deportees were daily facing fear, very poor living conditions and hunger until 1991.

### 5.1.2.1 Work culture

As previously mentioned, most of these people were farmers or from a farming family. However, with the exception of those who retired, the others are currently working another job. These include jobs such as a freelance job as a contractor or tailor, or as an employee by the public or governmental sectors. In other words, none of them are doing farming anymore, and the new generation has no knowledge about farming and did not learn farming from their parents.

### 5.1.2.2 Family size

According to the qualitative data, the average family size is seven persons (see Appendix 13). Similarly to Mergasur, they have more children in the case that there were human losses in previous operations.

### 5.1.2.3 Education level

Although most of the old generation was illiterate, the new generation had a great opportunity to graduate from institutions and universities. For example, the interviewee number one has eight children, two of them are now doctors and two of them are engineers.

## 5.2 Causes for Migration in The Rural Area of Mergasur

This part of the analysis will show and explain the quantitative and the qualitative outputs regarding the causes of migrations in the sub-district of Mergasur. The first quantitative stance was for determining the size of the demolition as well for unit selection. The second part of the quantitative analysis found the causes of migration and was completed by conducting questionnaires in the field. Data was gathered from the participants in Mergasur first and then gathered from the participants in Bahrka. After data collection, the SPSS program was used to analyze the data regarding the statistical significance, which has been assumed to be 95% correct. It is often expressed as a p-value, as follows:

- If the p-value  $\leq 0.05$  then it was statistically significant
- Or if the p-value  $>0.05$  then it was not statistically significant

The second part of the outputs were qualitative. This was conducted with the villagers through the in-depth interview and with the policy-makers by the expert interviews.

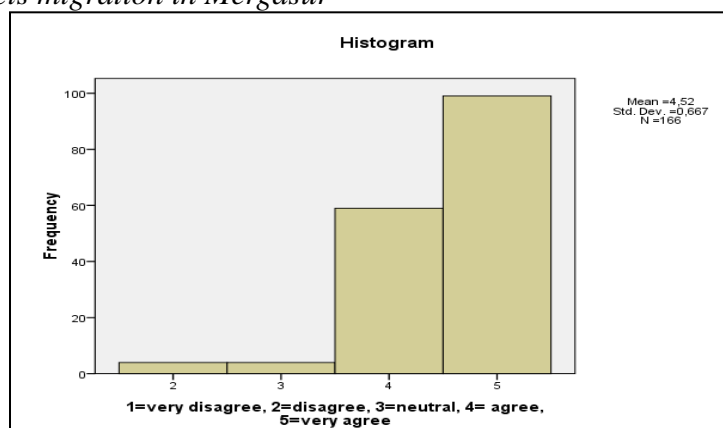
### 5.2.1 Quantitative Findings in Mergasur

#### 5.2.1.1 Income as a factor for migration

As a main concept, income has been focused on in the conceptual framework and has been connected to the villager's migration in Mergasur. It was important to determine its relationship with the migration process.

From the output of the SPSS analysis, the results showed that migration is strongly connected to the satisfactory income (see Fig-43 and Appendix-2). A great portion of 158 persons from 166 persons agree or strongly agreed to migrate elsewhere when they do not have a satisfactory income. However, just four persons answered neutrally and the other four persons were not influenced to migrate in any specific income level.

Figure 43- Income impacts migration in Mergasur



Source: Data from fieldwork (2019)

### 5.2.1.2 Extent of the satisfactory income

When the issue is about income, it should be clarified what are the levels of maximum, average and minimum of this income. After the data gathering, incomes were separated per person for each participant in Mergasur, and then categorized into two groups of satisfactory and non-satisfactory incomes (see Tab-28). The maximum, average and minimum satisfactory income were as follows: \$1402, \$347 and \$132. These ranges were calculated monthly for each person in a family. Similarly, the non-satisfactory income was calculated with the same process and the maximum, average and minimum were as follows: \$131, \$84 and \$41. Between the maximum non-satisfied and minimum satisfied income, the range can be called the critical income level. This means that this is the range within which someone can switch his or her mind to migrate or not migrate or return and vice versa. In this respect, it can be argued that these people will migrate under this critical level with an amount under \$132 per person per month in a family. When the policy-makers demonstrate any future policies, they must take in consideration this amount of income as a goal.

*Table 28- Extent of income in Mergasur*

| Level of income | Satisfactory income | Non-satisfactory income |
|-----------------|---------------------|-------------------------|
| Maximum         | \$1,402             | \$131                   |
| Average         | \$347               | \$84                    |
| Minimum         | \$132               | \$41                    |

*Source: Fieldwork (2019) (see Appendix-3)*

### 5.2.1.3 Factors impacting income-oriented migrants

Migration based income (MBI) is defined in this study as when “*a person in a village or in any place is ready to leave his or her origin place to get a satisfactory income in a destination place elsewhere*”. In this study and via a questionnaire form, a direct question was asked to explore this issue in order to determine factors that have impacted or are currently impacting migration based on income. Thus, the analysis was needed to go through the causes and effects rules in the correlation variables by using the SPSS program. The analysis identified a number of factors that are correlated to the migration based income (MBI), and these were gender, educated level, people’s opinion about the availability of physical capital assets, people’s responses about the role of the government on capital assets, and the satisfactory level of the participant towards the former and the current governmental policies (see Tab-29, Appendix-4).

Table 29- Factors impacting on migration based correlating with income in Mergasur

| # | Correlated factors                          |
|---|---|
| 1 | Gender                                      |
| 2 | Villagers with different education level    |
| 3 | Availability of the physical capital assets |
| 4 | The governmental role to the capital assets |
| 5 | Satisfaction towards policies               |

Source: Data from fieldwork (2019)

#### 5.2.1.4 Migration of income-oriented villagers with social segments

The factors which impacted migration were analysed one more time by using the One-way ANOVA procedure to determine whether there are any statistically significant differences between the means of two or more independent variables (Research, 2018). The analysis showed that two factors were significant with the migration based on income, and these were family income and family size (see Tab-30 and Appendix 5). Individuals from these families are always tending to have a big family and their decisions are made based on family needs and wants.

Table 30- One-way ANOVA factors impacting migration related to income in Mergasur

| # | Category            |
|---|---------------------|
| 1 | Family income level |
| 2 | Family size         |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

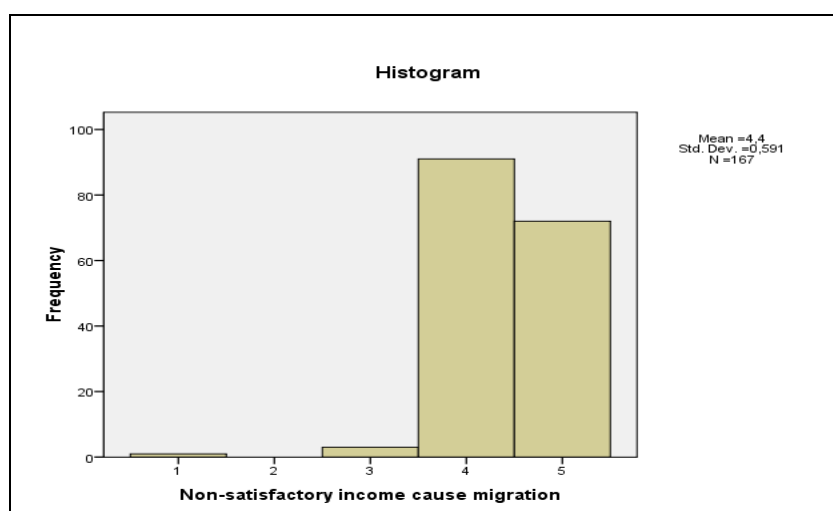
## 5.2.2 Quantitative Findings in Bahrka

### 5.2.2.1 Income as a factor for migration

Similar to the situation in Mergasur, the former deportees<sup>42</sup> in Bahrka are tightly connected with satisfactory income as well (see Fig-44, Appendix-7). From 166 participants, 165 persons agreed or strongly agreed to leave their origin places when their income is not satisfied.

<sup>42</sup> These people are originally from Mergasur but they have been deported after 1978

Figure 44- Income impacts migration in Bahrka



Source: Date from fieldwork (2019)

### 5.2.2.2 Extent of the satisfactory income

The ranges of the satisfactory incomes are divided into three levels (see Tab-31, Appendix-8), and these were \$2499, \$291 and \$142. The ranges of the non-satisfactory incomes were as follows: \$140, \$111, and \$21. The critical income level amount is \$142 per person per month.

Table 31-Extent of income in Bahrka

| Level of income | Satisfactory income | Non-satisfactory income |
|-----------------|---------------------|-------------------------|
| Maximum         | \$2499              | \$140                   |
| Average         | \$219               | \$111                   |
| Minimum         | \$142               | \$21                    |

Source: Fieldwork (2019)

### 5.2.2.3 Factors impact income-oriented migrants

The analysis showed that there are several factors that are linearly correlated with the migration based on satisfactory income, and these were family size, level of income satisfaction, people who are believing that the natural capital assets are important, and people who are believing that the government is playing a great role in providing the accessibility of the entire capital assets (see Tab- 32 and Appendix-9). In addition, migration based on satisfactory income was significant for those people who believe that the capital assets are not fairly distributed. In the next section, this analysis goes deeper through the other analysis to identify significance of factors.

Table 32- Factors impacting migration correlating with income in Bahrka

| # | Correlated factors           |
|---|------------------------------|
| 1 | Family size                  |
| 2 | Level of income satisfaction |
| 3 | Natural capital assets       |
| 4 | Government role              |
| 5 | Capital assets distribution  |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

#### 5.2.2.4 Migration of income-oriented villagers with social segments

For more detailed analysis and to identify the significance among variables, the data was analysed by the One-way ANOVA procedure and showed that several factors were significant with the migration based on satisfactory income, and these were family income, family size, satisfactory income and level of satisfaction (see Tab-33 and Appendix-10). This supports that the decisions in general and specifically for migration are highly related to the monthly income per person.

Table 33- One-way ANOVA factors impacting migration correlated with income in Bahrka

| # | Category                     |
|---|------------------------------|
| 1 | Family income level          |
| 2 | Family size                  |
| 3 | Level of satisfactory income |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

## 5.3 Conclusion

### 5.3.1 Work Culture

In both places, origin and destination, the villagers have left their farming projects. They are now busy in another job far from farming and have another source of income. Most of the former farmers are now old and unable to farm. Moreover, the new generation have no skill to do farming although some of them have an interest to be farmers and earn profit from farming projects. Migration caused very negative impacts, which pushed villagers to leave their lands without any proper use, and the lands are not counted as a source of income anymore.

### **5.3.2 Family Size**

Both groups in Mergasur and Bahrka tend to have several children. This means more human resources but not for farming anymore, and specifically for compensating their previous human losses.

### **5.3.3 Education Level**

Migration has provided a great transformation of the new generation to graduate in different educational levels such as in universities and institutions or from high school, and at least not remain as illiterate. This has increased a level of qualifications and enabled more human capital assets but not for agricultural projects. This transformation is a positive change and provides greater human capital assets.

### **5.3.4 Income and Migration**

The majority of the villagers, in Mergasur closely 95.18% and in Bahrka closely 99.35%, are willing to leave their places when they did not obtain satisfactory income. In this respect, income becomes a main factor to regulate migration. The range in Bahrka was more than the range in Mergasur because this group is more restricted in income and this prevented them from returning. Additionally, there was a difference in the critical income level (CIL) in these two places. The CIL was correlated with other factors as well. In Mergasur, the CIL is statistically correlated with both genders, educational levels, physical capital assets, governmental role and policies and was \$132.

Furthermore, the CIL in Bahrka was correlated with family size, level of income satisfaction, natural capital assets, governmental role, capital assets distribution and was \$142. This explains that the living cost in Bahrka is higher than living cost in Mergasur. The costs in the city center or places around the cities are higher than districts or sub-districts. In addition, the two CILs were statistically significant with family income and family size in Mergasur, and with family income, family size and level of satisfaction in Bahrka. This proved that these people are very tightly connected to their families and each step taken should match their families' needs and wants.

## **5.4 Qualitative Interview**

As previously mentioned, this study has another part to the approach: a qualitative approach. In this stance, the method of the in-depth interview and the expert interview was used to conduct interviews face-to-face via online interview. This was necessary to obtain qualitative answers that are related to the push and pull factors in both origin and destination places, and to explore their influences on the sustainable satisfactory income. Last but not least, this research aimed to explore



the level of the satisfaction of these people about governmental policies, and how all these issues affected migration decision making.

For these purposes, several questions were formulated, and all of them are related directly or indirectly to a variable or a group of variables that have been combined in the conceptual framework. The questions are designed in different formats. For the core questions, the open-ended format was used in order to obtain valuable answers that might not have been expected. This is what the researcher attempted to collect, in-depth information. For the sub-questions, which aimed to supplement the core questions, a close-ended format was used. Furthermore, all the interviews were recorded.

The fieldwork was conducted in a set of thirteen questions, (see Appendix-12, 14). Moreover, as a means to make the process easier, the questions were grouped into two categories. The first part was related to the general information about the interviewee. The second group went into much more detail (see Tab-34).

*Table 34- Questionnaire Form for the villagers ( see Appendix-12 , 14)*

| Interviewee No. | Question   | Purpose   | Variable                 |
|-----------------|--|---|--------------------------|
| 1-2             | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Where are you from (is your place of origin)?</li> <li>Are you living now in your place of origin?</li> </ul> | Find his/her origin place and in addition to know if he/she migrated, did he/she return and live in the origin place or not | Origin and places        |
| 3               | How old are you  | Find the labour force group   | Human capital            |
| 4               | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>What was your former job?</li> <li>What is your current job and what is your income?</li> </ul>               | Find his/her current job and monthly money earning  | Human capital and income |
| 5               | How many children do you have?   | Information about his/her marital status and the family size  | Human capital and income |
| 6               | What level of education you have reached?  | Education level   | Human capital            |
| 7               | Are you satisfied with your income?  | Extend the level of   | Income                   |

| Interviewee No. | Question   | Purpose   | Variable              |
|-----------------|--|---|-----------------------|
|                 |  | income satisfaction   |                       |
|                 | When did you leave your village?   | Period of leaving from the origin place                         | Migration period      |
| 9               | What compensation did you receive for your losses after the demolition operation and how you did you then build your life? | Explore the difficulty of rebuilding a new life                 | Financial capital     |
| 10              | Did you return to your place of origin?  | To confirm that the re-migration happened                       | Re-migration          |
| 11              | What factor pulls and pushes you to return to your village or to migrate again?  | Find the pull and push factors                                  | Pull and push factors |
| 12              | Has anybody from your family been “anfaled” <sup>43</sup> ?  | To what group related this person (see Tab-18)                  | Extreme condition     |
| 13              | Extra information during the interview   | To give the interviewee an opportunity to say what he/she wants |                       |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

Another part of the qualitative method is for the expert interview. The expert interviews were for the policy-makers or the implementers who participated in the demonstration or execution of the policies for the rural area. This group of people can contribute to the case study and supply information about managerial problems (Kothari, 2004, p. 113). The fieldwork was conducted by through a set of eight questions (see Appendix-16).

In the KR there are some ministries that have directly connected to the rural services, such as the Ministry of Agriculture and Water Resources, the Ministry of Planning, and the High Investment Board. A set of questions were inquired about demonstration and disciplines of policies and the level of awareness of the policy-makers about successes of the policies (see Tab-35).

Table 35- Form for the expert interview

| Interviewee No. | Question           | Purpose               | Variable         |
|-----------------|--------------------|-----------------------|------------------|
| 1               | Where do you work? | In which governmental | Related Ministry |

<sup>43</sup> It means to ask if anybody from your family has been murdered in the Anfal operation?

| Interviewee No. | Question  | Purpose   | Variable                  |
|-----------------|---|---|---------------------------|
|                 |   | institution he/she is working   |                           |
| 2               | At what level of management you are?  | Is he /she a normal employee, manager or general manager or higher level                              | Person power and position |
| 3               | What level of education you have reached  | Is he/she on the right position regards to his/her qualification                                      | Human capital             |
| 4               | How long are you working in this position?  | To recognize his/her skill, awareness about the policies  | Human capital             |
| 5               | How were the policies formulated for the rural areas and what was your role?      | To identify the approach of the management  | Management approach       |
| 6               | What were the outputs?  | Policy process  | Management process        |
| 7               | How were the outcomes of the policies and were they acceptable by the government? | To disclose the results of the former policies and the reaction of the government about these results | Outcomes and development  |
| 8               | How was or how is the level of the villagers' satisfaction with the policies?     | To identify the target achievement  | Management process        |

*Source: Author's own construct (2019)*

### 5.4.1 Categorizing of Pull and Push Factors in Mergasur

During the interview, it became apparent that many factors have impacted migration and each one had a different influence. In this regard, a set of factors were developed in two clusters of push and pull. The pull factors have been set when the interviewee has mentioned such need or a wish for something in his or her place of destination. In a similar manner for the push factors, these have been set when the interviewee did not agree with an issue in his or her place of origin. Another category for the interviewees was grouping into two clusters of potential and non-potential migrants based on the tone of responses during the interview, which was combined with the income level. Those who answered very clearly and did not mention migration during his or her interview were categorized as a non-potential migrant. However, those who were in doubt about staying or mentioned migration, have been grouped as a potential migrant.

#### 5.4.1.1 Pull factors

In Mergasur, villagers have been pulled by many factors, such as capital assets as well as factors

that are related to the issues of security problems (see Tab- 36 and 37). The word ‘*security*’ was mentioned by several interviewees but with different meanings. A number of the interviewees meant security as physical and property security, especially in the cases that were related to the losses of family members and properties. Moreover, another pattern of security arose during the interview and that was related to income security. The villagers were asking for a secure income, which meant an income that met their needs and would be received during retirement. In Iraq, when someone is self-employed, he will get no pension as retirement. In another word, retirement becomes secure only when someone worked for a governmental employer or military service. Another factor that arose was loyalty to the land. Most of the interviewees love their areas and lands, and are characterized as “*land-lovers*” people. During the interview it was apparent that although they had many struggles and were not satisfied, they were still trying to find solutions and to stay on their lands or nearby their lands. Three of them have said “*how can people sell their lands!, we have problems but selling my land is another issue*”. They meant “*it is impossible to sell my land*”.

Table 36 Pull factors for migration in Mergasur

| Interviewee_No     | Manifest code      | Latent code   |
|--------------------|--------------------|---|
| 1                  | financial capital  | diverse income  |
|                    |                    | secured and non-secured income  |
|                    | human capital      | family members as a labour force                                      |
|                    |                    | job skill   |
|                    | social capital     | family relationship   |
|                    | physical capital   | we have drinking water, electricity, and school                       |
|                    | natural capital    | fertile land for farming and cattle breeding                          |
| land-lovers people | natural view lover |   |
| 2                  | financial capital  | diverse income  |
|                    |                    | very satisfied  |
|                    | human capital      | job skill and awareness   |
| land-lovers people | natural view lover |   |
| 3                  | financial capital  | Satisfied   |
|                    |                    | secured income by the governmental employer                           |
| land-lovers people | natural view lover |   |
| 4                  | financial capital  | normal  |
|                    |                    | secured income by the governmental employer                           |
|                    | land-lovers people | natural view lover  |
| physical security  | I am very secured  |   |
| 5                  | financial capital  | diverse income  |
|                    |                    | I am satisfied and have a secured income by the governmental employer |
|                    | social capital     | my relatives are here   |
| physical security  | I am very secured  |   |
| 6                  | financial capital  | diverse income  |
|                    |                    | I am satisfied and have a secured income by the governmental employer |
|                    | physical security  | I am very secured   |
| 7                  | financial capital  | diverse income  |

| Interviewee_No | Manifest code      | Latent code                                 |
|----------------|--------------------|---|
|                | financial capital  | secured income by the governmental employer |
|                | natural capital    | I have 25 hectares land                     |
| 8              | financial capital  | secured income by the governmental employer |
|                | financial capital  | diverse income                              |
|                | human capital      | I finished agricultural high school         |
| 9              | financial capital  | secured income by governmental employer     |
|                | social capital     | my relatives are here                       |
| 10             | financial capital  | I am satisfied and doing a good job here    |
|                | land-lovers people | I love my land                              |

Source: Data from fieldwork (2019)

Table 37- Summarizing of the pull factors in Mergasur

| Common Statements from Interview Transcriptions | Repetition | Pull Factor         | Main Theme        |
|---|------------|---------------------|-------------------|
| I have a mix of secured and non-secured income  | 8          | Income              | Financial capital |
| I have a diverse income                         | 6          | Income              | Financial capital |
| I love my place                                 | 5          | Land-loyal person   | Natural capital   |
| I am satisfied with my income                   | 4          | Income              | Financial capital |
| I know my job well                              | 3          | Qualification       | Human capital     |
| My family members and relatives are here        | 3          | Human networks      | Social capital    |
| I am feeling secure                             | 3          | Feeling secure      | Security          |
| There is a road, water, electricity             | 3          | Essential needs     | Physical capital  |
| I have land for farming                         | 2          | Arable land         | Natural capital   |
| I have a lot of children                        | 1          | Family labour force | Human capital     |
| I have graduated                                | 1          | Educated            | Human capital     |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

#### 5.4.1.2 Push factors

##### 1. Capital assets

Moreover, the push factors were mostly for the capital assets and have been mentioned 13 times (see Tab- 38 and 39). The villagers in Mergasur were demanding a better income and a number of them were not satisfied with their current incomes, which will be explained later in detail. However, physical capital assets and specifically infrastructure, is not at a level acceptable by the villagers. They did not agree on the availability of the physical assets. They were asking for better roads, more electricity availability during the day and existence of places of higher education, such as institutions and universities, drinking water network and water for irrigation.

The last capital assets that were mentioned by the villagers were social capital assets. As

explained in the previous section, these people are very family oriented. As previously explained, the people in Mergasur are somewhat conservative, and sometimes this kind of conservatism restricts an individual's privacy and one is not allowed to move or act as one wishes. This might provide disadvantages. When people are living in a homogenous culture and are traditional, it will be hard to accept a new idea or change or develop something in this community. In addition, when something happens, this event will be transferred from mouth to mouth. From ten interviewees, two of them have mentioned that social networks play a negative role in Mergasur because of gossip. This certainly indicates a positive teamwork culture is lacking. The issue of teamwork culture, is identified as:

*“A team culture is made up of the values, beliefs, attitudes and behaviours shared by a team. It's how people work together towards a common goal and how they treat each other. These attributes could be positive or negative”* (Brajdic, 2019)

In the near future, this might be much more developed and people in this community cannot be brought together in a good communication, vision, and trust. For a small or a huge project or for making a decision, people collectively reaching a decision point is an advanced issue.

## 2. Governmental role and others

Other push factors were from the role of the government and these were mentioned five times. The villagers put the government as a first responsible side for market management of imported agri-products, subsidizing for the projects, and registration of land. In addition, they were upset about this kind of management approach and routines, which have been made by the top-down management and made a gap between plans and results. Moreover, there were other push factors and they were some kind of threats. Some of the interviewees were pushed by threats from the existence of the PKK and the Turkish army in some villages in Mergasur.

Table 38- Push factor for migration in Mergasur

| Interviewee_No | Manifest code       | Latent code  |
|----------------|---------------------|--|
| 1              | Financial capital   | Income not satisfied   |
|                |                     | Losing money because of selling price and high costs                                       |
|                |                     | Non-secured income   |
|                | Physical capital    | The young individuals must go to university and institution                                |
|                | Governmental policy | Lack of the government's performance in fodder, medicine, controlling the imported product |
|                | Social capital      | Bad word-of-mouth propaganda   |
|                | Market space        | Product availability and selling price   |
| 2              | Natural capital     | Land ownership   |
|                | Governmental policy | Top-down management and lack of governance   |
| 3              | Financial capital   | I prefer a secured income on non-secured revenue from farming                              |
| 4              | Financial capital   | Non-secured income   |

| Interviewee_No | Manifest code     | Latent code   |
|----------------|-------------------|---|
|                | Financial capital | Non beneficial project                                |
|                | Physical capital  | Infrastructure  |
| 6              | Financial capital | Non beneficial project                                |
|                | Social capital    | Bad word-of-mouth propaganda                          |
| 7              | Financial capital | Non-secured income                                    |
|                | Financial capital | Income not satisfied                                  |
|                | Financial capital | Losing money because of selling price and high costs  |
|                | Security          | The threat from the PKK and the Turkish army          |
| 8              | Physical capital  | Lack of good road, school, health centre, electricity |
|                | Financial capital | Income not satisfied                                  |
|                | physical capital  | Infrastructure problems                               |
|                | Physical security | The threat from the PKK and the Turkish army          |

Source: Data from fieldwork (2019)

Table 39- Summarizing of the push factors in Mergasur

| Relevant Transcription Text                             | Repetition | Relevant Push Factor         | Theme                                 |
|---|------------|------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Projects bring nothing                                  | 4          | Unacceptable selling price   | Market problem                        |
| I need a secure income                                  | 4          | Non-secured income           | Financial capital                     |
| I cannot live with this amount                          | 3          | Non-satisfied income         | Financial capital                     |
| We have many infrastructure lacks                       | 3          | Bad Infrastructure           | Physical capital                      |
| Bad word-of-mouth propaganda                            | 2          | Human networks               | Social capital                        |
| Non-price competition ability                           | 2          | Imported products            | Institutional performance, Government |
| The threat by PKK and Turkish army                      | 2          | Death                        | Security                              |
| No place for higher education                           | 1          | Lack of infrastructure       | Physical capital                      |
| We receive little amounts or this does not come on time | 1          | Governmental subsidizing     | Institutional performance, Government |
| No registration for land                                | 1          | Land ownership               | Institutional performance, Government |
| The government is not listening to us                   | 1          | Top-down management approach | Institutional performance, Government |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

### 5.4.2 Combination of Push and Pull Factors in Margasur

In general, the pull and push factors have been coded according to the main themes and maintain consistency with the concepts and variables in the conceptual framework. The most highlighted pull factors were the capital assets such as financial, natural, human, physical and social assets, and were mentioned 33 times during the interviews. However, physical security in some places in Mergasur was a factor to attract villagers to come and live in or around Mergasur, and this was mentioned three times.

The sum of the pull and push factors on migration after combination were mostly from the

financial capital assets by a score of 25 points<sup>44</sup>, and then followed by physical and natural capital assets with seven points for each one (see Tab-40). The Human and social capital assets, in addition, the security and institutional factors, are scored five times also for each one. And this ends with four scores for the market problems (see Tab- 40).

Table 40- Sum of the pull and push factors from table 37 and 39 (Mergasur)

| #     | Capital assets            | Score | %  |          |
|-------|---------------------------|-------|----|----------|
| 1     | Financial capital         | 25    | 38 | Top four |
| 2     | Physical capital          | 7     | 11 |          |
| 3     | Natural capital           | 7     | 11 |          |
| 4     | Human capital             | 5     | 8  |          |
| 5     | Social capital            | 5     | 8  |          |
| 6     | Security                  | 5     | 8  |          |
| 7     | Institutional performance | 5     | 8  |          |
| 8     | Market problem            | 4     | 6  |          |
| Total |                           | 63    |    |          |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

### 5.4.3 Income and Migration in Mergasur

Income was one of the most attractive factors for these people. Most of the villagers regularly have an additional source of income to their main incomes. Some of them are doing farming as a main income source, and the others are doing other jobs such as being employed by governmental institutions or working doing their business, and they were complementing their incomes with other sources (see Appendix -13- 1, 2, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 8 ). Some of them have left farming because the farming projects brought less or not enough profit for them; therefore, a part of these people described farming as losing of money and wasting of time. Interestingly, the case of having land or not was a strong factor for doing or not doing farming (see Appendix -13- 3, 4, 6, 7 and 8).

Among ten interviewees, two of them belonged to the potential migrant category (see Tab-41- Interviewee No. 7 and 8). Potential migrants “*are those people who have not migrated but are tending to migrate in the future*”. These two interviewees had a low level of the non-secured income and both had a problem with physical security in their villages. Regarding the non-secured income, interviewee No.1 should belong also to the group of the potential migrant because he had also a quite low non-secured income. However, he has invested in his land and his area was physically secured. Hence, he was waiting to obtain a profit on his investment.

<sup>44</sup> The pints are number of times that were mentioned



Table 41- Potential migration with combination with income in Mergasur

| Interviewee_No | Family size | Income \$/person |             | Migration potential    |
|----------------|-------------|------------------|-------------|------------------------|
|                |             | Secured          | Non-secured |                        |
| 1              | 14          | 40               | 40          | Non-potential migrant  |
| 2              | 6           | 133              | 200         | Non -potential migrant |
| 3              | 3           | 216              | 0           | Non -potential migrant |
| 4              | 5           | 60               | 80          | Non -potential migrant |
| 5              | 3           | 153              | 280         | Non -potential migrant |
| 6              | 11          | 61               | 181         | Non -potential migrant |
| 7              | 9           | 77               | 44          | Potential migrant      |
| 8              | 7           | 108              | 28          | Potential migrant      |
| 9              | 1           | 259              | 0           | Non -potential migrant |
| 10             | 6           | 0                | 2000        | Non -potential migrant |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

For the families who were normally satisfied with their income, the average monthly income per each person was \$167 (see Tab-43) and (see Appendix -9- 4, 6 and 7). However, the families, who were monthly gaining \$108 per person, were not satisfied (see Tab- 41 and see Appendix -9- 1 and 8). Nonetheless, the families, who were obtaining more than \$314 were very satisfied (see Tab-42) and (see Appendix -13-2, 3, 5, 9 and 10). After the calculation for all groups, the average among all groups was \$196, and this amount is the average desirable income per person per month. One more point which must be mentioned is that the villagers who were employed by the governmental institutions have never mentioned the market situation or problems and nothing about subsidizing because they had a secured income from the government (see Appendix -13- 2, 4, 5, 6, 8 and 9).

Another group from these people who were doing farming was strongly connected to the market and they were strongly blaming that their revenue from their projects cannot cover the expenses (see Appendix -13- 1, 3 and 7). Every one among them was working to achieve his or her satisfactory and secured income.

Table 42-Family's income and average monthly income for each person in the family (Mergasur)

| Interview no. | Income \$ | Family size | Satisfaction | Income /person | Average income per person |
|---------------|-----------|-------------|--------------|----------------|---------------------------|
| 4             | 700       | 5           | Normal       | \$140          | \$167                     |
| 6             | 2662      | 11          | Normal       | \$242          |                           |
| 7             | 1000      | 9           | Normal       | \$121          |                           |
| 1             | 1120      | 14          | Not          | \$80           | \$108                     |

| Interview no.                  | Income \$ | Family size | Satisfaction | Income /person | Average income per person |
|--------------------------------|-----------|-------------|--------------|----------------|---------------------------|
| 8                              | 952       | 7           | Not          | \$136          |                           |
| 2                              | 1998      | 6           | Very         | \$333          | \$314                     |
| 3                              | 648       | 3           | Very         | \$216          |                           |
| 5                              | 1299      | 3           | Very         | \$433          |                           |
| 9                              | 259       | 1           | Very         | \$259          |                           |
| 10                             | 2000      | 6           | Very         | \$333          |                           |
| Average income per each person |           | 6,5         |              | 219            | 196,3                     |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

In reference to the first two top issues, which were secured sustainable income and physical security, the physical security is an issue that no one can negotiate and inevitably exists. However, secured sustainable income is another issue that can provide security and meet other human needs in several ways. The secured sustainable income can increase the level of available capital assets. For example, if one has enough money, one can invest in a project or find other solutions for transportation or energy sources, in addition, he can do farming in secure land in or near Mergasur.

#### 5.4.4 Villager's Satisfaction and Rural Policies in Mergasur

##### 1. Classic farming culture

People in Mergasur were mostly farmers or some of them are still farmers. They were using very classic tools for farming. Although the government tried to bring farmers new farming technology, this support was not for all, but for a small group of them. In addition, the farmers were blaming the government for their yields and selling price. For example, most of the seasonal products were facing or were having problems at harvesting seasons. At the season period, the yields were coming into the market and because of not enough capacity for storing products and selling in another season, there was not enough manufacturing to modify raw products and sell these products in another form and another season. Raw and fresh products were entering into the market and were selling at any price. Therefore, the selling price sharply came down, and this was causing loss of money.

##### 2. Governmental role

Agricultural projects are those projects that belong to the country's food security and there are some inputs that have been supplied by the government. These subsidies were some inputs and materials but arrived not on time and were not enough in quantity. These inputs had a direct connection with the projects costs, such as electricity or fuel availability, irrigation system,

transportation, and labour. As previously explained in the theoretical chapter, these areas have poor infrastructure because of the Anfal operations' insufficient infrastructure, which result in making the costs of the projects higher.

Another side of the problem was that the villagers were blaming the governmental institutional performances in distributing the capital assets and more specifically about the land registration policies for the rural area and agricultural sector. In this area, the land is not registered on the farmers' names; villagers and farmers distribute land amongst each other. This put farmers in a kind of doubt of whether to invest or not in their lands. Another issue which was identified, was the unawareness of governmental institutions about the market problems, specifically the Ministry of Agricultural and Water Resources (MoAWR), as M.R.M (Interviewee\_No.2) said:

*“The government does not know the size of the local agri-production in order to put a rule for the imported products, the task of the ministry of agriculture is to protect the local production, which it has been totally neglected. Until today, the governmental administration is applying the top-down managing approach, and certainly, the policies were formulating with the same pattern”* (see Appendix-13).

In this regards, there was a kind of misunderstanding or a lack of communication between the government and the villagers or the farmers. These problems accumulated for many years and negatively influenced agricultural projects and caused loss of money and, in addition, made farmers disappointed. These pushed farmers to not farm anymore and let the market be opened for the imported products to occupy the local market.

### **5.4.5 Categorizing Pull and Push Factors in Bahrka**

There were several pull and push factors that influenced migration. The categories are set in the same way that has been set for the villagers in Mergasur. The pull factors have been set when someone mentioned an acceptable or agreed upon issue elsewhere. In contrast, the push factors have been set when the interviewee mentioned a point about his place of origin and this point was not acceptable by him or something that is important for him is not available.

#### **5.4.5.1 Pull factors**

The majority of the pull factors were from the capital assets, such as financial, social, human, natural, physical (see Tab- 43 and 44). The natural capital assets were the most replicated matter during the interviews. In addition, talking about the natural capital assets was about having land or not. These people currently use their land for leisure but not for farming. Moreover, these people

are very loyal to their lands, they are the same people categorised as “*land-lovers*”. Although they have not returned, they are not ready to sell their lands. Nevertheless, this loyalty was not attractive enough to pull the people to return to their lands in Mergasur (see Appendix-15- Interviewee No. 2,5,8). On the one hand, this point was counted as a potential for the pull factor. On the other hand, there were other pull factors, such factors as financial capital assets, that were the most commonly announced and were mostly about a job for secured satisfied income. The second pull factor was from the social capital assets. These people did not change their traditions that related to the family and relatives. The family and relative’s network was an issue that involved decision making in migration, and pulled some of these people to stay in Bahrka among their relatives. It was noticed in the fieldwork that the relationship among these people in Bahrka was tighter than the relationship in Mergasur. The capital assets were from the physical capital assets. These people are very satisfied with the current physical assets in Bahrka. Collectively, the pulled factors in Bahrka were much more than the pulled factors in Mergasur and these match Lee’s theory.

*Table 43- Pull factors for migration in Bahrka*

| Interviewee_No | Manifest code     | Latent code   |
|----------------|-------------------|---|
| 1              | Financial capital | I am not satisfied  |
|                | Financial capital | Secured income  |
|                | Social capital    | Family relationship   |
| 2              | Land-lover people | The nature lovers   |
|                | Social capital    | My family members want to stay in Bahrka  |
| 3              | Financial capital | I am very satisfied   |
| 4              | Financial capital | I am satisfied  |
|                | Financial capital | I have a very good job  |
| 5              | Natural resource  | I have five hectares land   |
|                | Financial capital | I am not satisfied  |
|                | Land-loyal people | I am not selling my land  |
| 6              | Financial capital |   |
|                | Natural capital   | I have 1.5 hectares of irrigated land   |
|                | Land-loyal people | I am using the land in the village just for leisure and never thought to sell my land |
| 7              | Financial capital | I am satisfied  |
| 8              | Financial capital | I am satisfied  |
|                | Land-loyal people | I love my rural’s environment   |
|                | Physical capital  | We have a house and electricity   |

| Interviewee_No | Manifest code     | Latent code              |
|----------------|-------------------|--------------------------|
| 9              | Natural capital   | We have 12 hectares land |
| 10             | Natural capital   | We have 12 hectares land |
|                | Financial capital | I am satisfied           |

Source: Data from the fieldwork (2019)

Table 44- Summarizing of the pull factors in Bahrka

| Text                            | Replication | Relevant            | Thema                    |
|---------------------------------|-------------|---------------------|--------------------------|
| I love my place, or I have land | 4           | Land-loyal person   | Natural capital assets   |
| I have land in Mergasur         | 4           | Landowner           | Natural capital assets   |
| I am satisfied                  | 6           | Income satisfaction | Financial capital assets |
| My family`s members are here    | 2           | Family network      | Social capital           |
| We have a house and electricity | 1           | Essential needs     | Physical capital         |
| -                               | 0           | -                   | Human capital            |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

#### 5.4.5.2 Push factors

The push factors were mostly from the capital assets as well, which they have realized in Mergasur (see Tab- 45 and 46). Then after the analysis, it was realized that most issues were related to the financial capital assets, and they were about the satisfactory income. Though, these people are employed by the public sector, it does not mean that they have a secured income. However, this income was not sustained by a part of their family. They are in doubt to obtain a secured income in Mergasur, if they return.

The other push factors were from the physical capital assets, such as roads, drinking water network, electricity, schools, health centers, institutions and universities and mosques. All of them mentioned that their origin places lacked of several basic needs for a normal life. These factors are mostly available in Bahrka. The rest of the push factors were natural and human capital assets. Moreover, there were several points that related to the governmental functions, such controlling the country's border, enhancing the investment in building manufacturing for food processing, revitalizing the tourism sector and providing farmers with microfinance for the agricultural projects in Mergasur. The last issue, which has been replicated by the interviewees, was the physical security, which is not available. The existence of the PKK in these areas has become a

big threat on people's lives and from ten interviewees nine of them mentioned this threat.

Table 45- Push factor for migration in Bahrka

| Interviewee_No | Manifest code          | Latent code   |
|----------------|------------------------|---|
| 1              | Financial capital      | I am not satisfied with my income   |
|                | Physical capital       | We need road, drinking water, electricity, school and health centre   |
|                | Physical security      | Threat of PKK   |
| 2              | Financial capital      | I am not satisfied with my income   |
|                | Physical security      | Threat of PKK   |
|                | Physical capital       | The non-existence of institutions and universities, health centre, road, electricity, network pipes and no school |
|                | Capital capital        | My children have no knowledge about agriculture   |
| 3              | Natural resource       | My father's land can not bring a good income for all of us  |
|                | Physical security      | Threat of PKK   |
| 4              | Financial capital      | The land is not profitable  |
|                | Physical security      | Threat of PKK   |
|                | Physical capital       | No existence of road, electricity, school, hospital, drinking water   |
| 5              | Natural capital        | The land is not profitable for everyone to do farming   |
|                | Government subsidizing | The government should manage the product  |
|                | Market problem         | I can not reach to the big markets  |
|                | Government investment  | The government can build manufacture food processing  |
|                | Market problem         | The government should control the imported products on the border   |
| 6              | Physical capital       | In my village, there is no road, no health centre and school  |
|                | Physical security      | Threat of PKK   |
|                | Financial capital      | The farming projects are not profitable   |
| 7              | Physical security      | Threat of PKK   |
|                | Physical capital       | We need a road, school, mosque and health centre  |
|                | Physical capital       | I need road, house, hospital and school   |
|                | Government investment  | The government can enhance the agriculture and tourism sectors  |
| 8              | Market control         | The government must control the borders from the imported agri-products   |
|                | Government investment  | The government can supply the farmers by the credit   |
|                | Physical capital       | My village has no health centre, school and road  |
| 8              | Human capital          | I love to do farming but I have no knowledge  |
|                | Government investment  | The government did not support tourism nor agriculture sector   |

| Interviewee_No | Manifest code     | Latent code  |
|----------------|-------------------|--|
| 9              | Physical security | Threat of PKK  |
|                | Physical security | Threat of Mine   |
|                | Physical capital  | We need a house, road and mosque   |
| 10             | Physical security | Threat of PKK  |
|                | Physical capital  | We need electricity, health centre and mosque                                    |
|                | Natural capital   | The land is not providing a good income for all of us now, we are now 20 persons |

Source: Data from the fieldwork (2019)

Table 46- Summarizing of the push factors in Bahrka

| Text   | Replication | Relevant        | Them              |
|--|-------------|-----------------|-------------------|
| There is no a road, water, electric, health centre, school | 9           | Essential Needs | Physical capital  |
| I am feeling not secure                                    | 8           | Not secured     | Security          |
| I am satisfied with my income                              | 7           | Income          | Financial capital |
| Investment, border control, revitalization sector          | 7           | Policy-making   | Governmental role |
| Farming is not profitable                                  | 5           | Profit          | Financial capital |
| My family members and relatives are here                   | 2           | Human networks  | Social capital    |
| My children have no knowledge about farming                | 1           | Qualification   | Human capital     |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

### 5.4.6 Combination of Push and Pull Factors in Bahrka

The sum of the pull and push factors on migration were mostly from the financial capital assets and this reached 18 score points, and was followed by the natural capital assets with 15 points (see Tab- 47). The physical capital assets were ranked third with a score of 10 points, and are part of the identified top four issues. The other factors were placed as follows: physical security with eight points, institutional role with seven points, social capital assets with three points, and human capital assets with one point.

Table 47- Score points of pull and push factors from table 44 and 46 (Bahrka)

| # | Capital assets    | Score | %  | Rank     |
|---|-------------------|-------|----|----------|
| 1 | Financial capital | 18    | 28 | Top four |
| 2 | Natural capital   | 15    | 23 |          |

| # | Capital assets     | Score | %  | Rank |
|---|--------------------|-------|----|------|
| 3 | Physical capital   | 10    | 15 |      |
| 4 | Security           | 8     | 12 |      |
| 5 | Institutional role | 7     | 11 |      |
| 6 | Social capital     | 4     | 6  |      |
| 7 | Human capital      | 1     | 2  |      |
|   | Total              | 67    |    |      |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

### 5.4.7 Income and Migration in Bahrka

It was noticed and recognized that income was not the only factor which played a substantial role on decision-making for migration or reverse migration, but it was the main one. From ten interviewees, six of them were ready to return to their villages. However, these had different levels of secured or non-secured income (see Tab -48). Their incomes started from \$57 to \$600 per month per person. Who was earning \$600, was willing to return to his village in Mergasur although he was earning a good income in Bahrka. After a deep discussion, it was found that he was a Land-lover's person.

On the other hand, people who were not ready to return were earning different income from \$77 to \$1250. Those who were earning \$77 were supposed to belong to the group of return because this income was earning too little (see Tab- 49). However, he was not aiming to return. He said, his children were students and were going to university in Erbil and this costs too much. He can not finance them when he lives in Mergasur and the others live in Erbil. Besides his father's land can not be profitable for all family member as it was before. Moreover, there is also the existence of the battle between the PKK and the Turkish army. The interviewee No.3 similarly said there is a great threat from the existence of PKK and the Turkish army and in addition his land is not profitable.

Table 48- Potential migration with combination with income in Bahrka

| Income/person \$ |             |         |             |                              |
|------------------|-------------|---------|-------------|------------------------------|
| Interviewee_No   | Family size | Secured | Non-secured | Migration potential          |
| 1                | 2           | 150     | 0           | Potential return-migrant     |
| 2                | 9           | 77      | 0           | Non-potential return-migrant |
| 3                | 11          | 0       | 181         | Non-potential return-migrant |
| 4                | 2           | 1250    | 0           | Non-potential return-migrant |



| Income/person \$ |    |     |    |                              |
|------------------|----|-----|----|------------------------------|
| 5                | 13 | 65  | 0  | Potential return-migrant     |
| 6                | 9  | 0   | 55 | Potential return-migrant     |
| 7                | 6  | 200 | 0  | Potential return-migrant     |
| 8                | 1  | 600 | 0  | Potential return-migrant     |
| 9                | 10 | 57  | 0  | Potential return-migrant     |
| 10               | 7  | 285 | 0  | Non-potential return-migrant |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

For the families who were normally satisfied, the average income per each person monthly was \$286 (see Tab- 49) and (see Appendix -15- Interviewee No. 7, 8 and 9). However, the families who were monthly gaining \$87 per each person, were not satisfied (see Tab-49 and see Appendix - 14- Interviewee No. 1,2,5 and 6). Moreover, the families who were on average gaining \$572 per month were very satisfied (see Appendix -15- Interview No.3, 4 and 10). After the calculation of all groups, it was found that the average income was \$315, and this amount is the average desirable income per each person for each month.

Table 49-Family's income and average monthly income for each person in the family (Bahrka)

| Interview no. | Income \$ | Family size | Satisfaction | Income \$/person | Average income per person \$ |
|---------------|-----------|-------------|--------------|------------------|------------------------------|
| 7             | 1200      | 6           | Normal       | 200              | 286                          |
| 8             | 600       | 1           | Normal       | 600              |                              |
| 9             | 570       | 10          | Normal       | 57               |                              |
| 5             | 845       | 13          | Not          | 65               | 87                           |
| 6             | 495       | 9           | Not          | 55               |                              |
| 1             | 300       | 2           | Not          | 150              |                              |
| 2             | 693       | 9           | Not          | 77               |                              |
| 3             | 1991      | 11          | Very         | 181              | 572                          |
| 4             | 2500      | 2           | Very         | 1250             |                              |
| 10            | 2565      | 7           | Very         | 285              |                              |

Source: Author's own construct (2019)

#### 5.4.8 Villager's Satisfaction and Rural Policies in Bahrka

The interviewees held the government fully responsible for several matters and problems that have remained so far. The new investment era in 2009 by the KRG did bring great hope to the farmers, landowners, and villagers and specifically those who are living at the moment in Mergasur. However, this campaign did not serve the rural area (see Section 3.9.2).

Those who were living now in Bahrka and have land or not in Mergasur are not currently ready to go back to their villages. They were saying that the farming projects are not profitable. They had several problems with inputs for their projects and the government was not subsidizing on time. Moreover, they had problem in marketing their products in the local markets and the surrounding market. They cannot compete with the imported products, in addition, and the surplus products were not going to be manufactured but rather been damaged. These people are aware of income diversity, and according to the Ministry of Municipality and Tourism can enhance investors to develop programs related to tourist places in this area and people can get another source of income. Another issue related to the projects was that a part of them talked about credit as capital money, which was not available when they need it and the governmental side was not helpful in this case. This would be some other responsibility of the government. It was also a governmental role to take care of the financial, natural, physical, social and human capitals and make them available. In addition, security problems is another task to be handled by the government.

## **5.5 Policy Formulation, Following-up and Evaluation (Qualitative Expert Interview)**

To attain the qualitative answer or answers of the question “how policy was formulated, followed up, and evaluated by the KRG for the rural areas, and what were the results?” It was necessary to involve people at all managerial levels of micro, meso and macro from the governmental institutions (see Fig-45). Those people include those who are or were formulating or executing the governmental policies for the rural area in the Kurdistan Region. There was another category for these people’s contribution and it was “who should be involved in this stance and in which ministry?” During the literature review and data gathering and analysis, the conclusion was that the most popular income generator in the rural areas is from the agriculture sector in the first place and then from the tourism sector in some areas. In addition and in parallel to the ministries, the governorates have a great role to play for this issue. Therefore, the focus was on six persons, two from the MoAWR in lower managerial level, two general directors one of them from the MoAWR and another from the Board of Investment, and two persons from the top level of management (ministry or governorate).

Figure 45- Level of management

|                                   |                                       |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Top management<br>(Higher level)  | Prime minister                        |
|                                   | Minister, head of borad, governorates |
| Lower management<br>(Lower level) | General director                      |
|                                   | Manager or employee                   |

Source: Author's own construct (2020)

### 1. Lower Level Management

The two persons at the micro level (lower level management) were two governmental employees from the MoAWR. The two interviewees were Mohammad Rasheed and Othman Amin (see Appendix-17, Interview No 1, 2). They said that the policies were coming down from the top-level management without their participation and without farmer's participation, and they do not know who is making these policies. They are in a position that the policies were not serving the villagers and famers and they must be changed. As acceptance of the former policies results, from the scale 0-10 degrees, they gave between 0-2 as a score.

### 2. Middle Level Management

The two general directors from the MoAWR and from the Board of Investment had different perspectives about the policy formulation in Kurdistan Region (see Appendix-17, Interview No 3, 4). The general director of the MoAWR said that the policies are made from the low level of management and should not be like this. It should be made from the top level of management. As acceptance of the former policies results from the scale 0-10 degrees, he was not totally in agreement about the results and gave six as a score. About the question of who follows and evaluates the policies? He answered that the general director level of management is following and evaluating the plans and policies.

Another perspective about policy-making was by the general director of the Board of Investment. He answered and said that the policies are coming down from the top level of management and they are somehow acceptable, which means 50%.

### 3. Top Level Management

The two persons from the top level of management, whom were interviewed, were the Head of the Board of Investment and the Governorate of Erbil (see Appendix-17- Interview No 5, 6). They are in managerial positions similar to a minister. About the policy-making, the head of the Board of Investment said that he is making policies and sending these down. As acceptance of the former policies results, from the scale 0-10 degrees, he gave between 4-5 as a score point. He was not in

agreement on the results of the former policies and connected this to bad qualifications of his staff, referring to the general directors.

Another person from the top managerial level was the Governor of Erbil and he was the last interviewee whom was interviewed. He said that he is making policies with participation of the head of the districts and then is sending these to the top managerial level for approval. As for acceptance to the former policies, he gave seven from 10 points as a score point.

A potential conclusion can be reached that the term of the policy was not well defined by all interviewees. From these six persons, only one person could explain it well. They were mixing the term policy with plan when policy is the interpretation of the laws and rules to achieve the goals that have been set in the plan. The problem was not only with the terminology of policy; there was also a kind of unclear policy-making approach by the Kurdistan Regional Government. Each minister or sector applies different approaches for policy-making. In addition, there was a lack of policy following-up and evaluation, and there was also a lack of participation of the core segment or the relevant people in policy-making. None of the interviewees mentioned the local people or NGOs or private sector during the policy formulation. All of them confirmed that the policies are being sent to the Prime Minister to be approved then coming back for implementation.

The problems that have been mentioned by interviewees and connected to cause and affects were also collected (see Tab-50), and were as follows:

*Table 50- List of problems by the expert interviewees*

|   | Problems   | Causes  | Affects  |
|---|--|---|--|
| 1 | Lack of subsidizing per product and on time  | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Increases product unit cost</li> </ul>   |  |
| 2 | Focus on big farmers and ignore small farmers  | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Project losing</li> <li>Unemployment</li> </ul>  |  |
| 3 | Weak control of the boarders against imported products   | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>More competition in market</li> <li>Product surplus</li> <li>Decrease selling price</li> </ul> | Income   |
| 4 | Weak plans to export local agricultural products in systematic payment for the products , which have been bought by the government | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Buying products at lower selling price</li> </ul>  |  |
| 5 | No enhancement for the new agricultural graduated persons to have their own projects   | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Allocation of human capital and employment</li> </ul>  | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Human capital assets</li> <li>Income</li> </ul>   |
| 6 | Weak qualification in the agricultural branches and extension centers in the rural areas   | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Less production</li> <li>Bad farming</li> <li>Increase selling price</li> </ul>                | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Adaptation with the new technology</li> <li>Human capital assets</li> <li>Income</li> </ul> |
| 7 | Bad infrastructure   | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Makes life harder</li> <li>Increases cost to the</li> </ul>                                    | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Lifestyle</li> <li>Income</li> </ul>  |

| #  | Problems  | Causes  | Affects  |
|----|---|---|--|
|    |   | projects<br>• Increase selling price                                  |  |
| 8  | No census and accurate data   | • Hard to run the governmental programs                               |  |
| 9  | Problems by land ownership  | • Difficulties to manage projects                                     | Performance of the government to serve villagers |
| 10 | A mix between social and capitalism systems<br>Lack of team works among the ministries<br>No plan for housing nearby villages with an acceptable infrastructure | Hard to run the governmental programs                                 |  |
| 11 | Finding a better job and income in the cities   | Migration   |  |
| 12 | Employing the farmers in the governmental institutions  | Decreases labor in the agriculture sector                             | Human capital assets                             |
| 13 | Non political security and safety sometimes   | • Decrease investment<br>• Stopped market                             | • Development<br>• Income                        |
| 14 | Bureaucratic routines, which makes problems to an external investor to come and invest  | • Decreasing in investment<br>• Lack of capital money for development | Physical and financial capital assets            |

Source: Author's own construct (2020)

In this table, there were diverse types of problems and each problem causes significant effects on an issue. The problems numbered 1-4 cause different impacts and at the end are affecting the level of income. In addition, the problems number 5, 6, and 7 are having chain effects and at the end affecting the human capital and level of income. The problems number eight, nine and 10 are affecting the performance of the government to plan and provide services. In addition, the government was not able achieve the targeted governmental goals. Moreover, the problems number 11 and 12 are directly affecting the human capital assets in the rural areas. The problem number 13 is related to the security and stability. It is clear that investment comes after available security and stability in an area and then the development programs can be run easier and more effectively. The last problem, which is number 14, is the routine for the investment process. The routines are causing the investment process to run very slowly and all of the investors are trying to invest and make his or her project productive. The government applies a mix of social and capitalism systems in parallel and this makes for many unclear routes for the investors and is not supportive.

## 5.6 Conclusion

### 1. Mergasur

In Mergasur, there were a mix of pull and push factors which made up the top four factors in the table (see Tab-40). They were financial, physical, natural, human and social capital assets, and

additionally security and institutional performance. These were the issues that the villagers were concerned about. The market and marketing were not a hot issue because most of them were earning an income but not from farming. However, those who were still doing farming, were struggling with the classic farming methods and lack of labor force. Furthermore, they were struggling with weak infrastructure, which made the projects' inputs more expensive and caused loss of money. Moreover, in the markets, there were other problems. The farmers had problems with market's surplus and demand and these impacted the selling price. These all impacted project profitability.

Income level in Mergasur had another level and form. All of the interviewees agreed to having a secured sustained income. The ranges of this income were different. From the averages, the average ranges of incomes were as follows:

- 1- Very satisfied \$314
- 2- Normal satisfied \$167
- 3- Not satisfied \$108

## 2. Bahrka

In Bahrka, the mix of the pull and push factors were somehow different regarding Mergasur. The factors were from financial, natural and physical, and additionally, security. The institutional role from the governmental side was the fifth factor. The differences were in social and human capital assets. These two groups of assets were not in the concerns of these individuals in Bahrka and this is because these people have lived a quite long time far from the rural area and have become more civilized nearby the city center of Erbil. Moreover, they were not needing skilled persons in farming because they have assured another source of income. The combination of the factors in Mergasur and Bahrka found another term for the concerned factors (see Tab-51). The financial capital assets, which were from the income issue, were placed on the top in the table, and followed by the natural and physical capital assets. Additionally, there were security, institutional or governmental performance, social and human capital assets, and finally market problems.

*Table 51- Sum of the pull and push factors from Mergasur & Bahrka*

| # | Capital assets            | Score | %  |
|---|---------------------------|-------|----|
| 1 | Financial capital         | 43    | 34 |
| 2 | Natural capital           | 22    | 17 |
| 3 | Physical capital          | 17    | 13 |
| 4 | Security                  | 13    | 10 |
| 5 | Institutional performance | 12    | 10 |

| #     | Capital assets | Score | % |
|-------|----------------|-------|---|
| 6     | Social capital | 9     | 7 |
| 7     | Human capital  | 6     | 5 |
| 8     | Market problem | 4     | 3 |
| Total |                | 126   |   |

*Source: Author's own construct (2020)*

As previously described, the financial capital assets were mostly about having or not having a satisfied sustainable income and the ranges were:

- 1- Very satisfied \$572
- 2- Normal satisfied \$286
- 3- Not satisfied \$87

In this respect, the average income levels between these two places, Mergasur and Bahrka, were as follows:

- 1- Average of very satisfied \$443
- 2- Average of the normal satisfied \$227
- 3- Average of the not satisfied \$98

And if they compared with the average critical income level (CIL) from the quantitative findings, which was \$142 (see Section 5.3.4), it can be seen that the CIL is laid between the average normal satisfied (\$227) and the average not satisfied (\$98) and this can be used as a satisfactory sustainable income per each person per month.

### *3. Satisfaction on the governmental performance (Villagers)*

These people from both places were not satisfied by the governmental efforts at all. The mentioned a set of problems as follows:

- 1- Lack of new technology for farming projects
- 2- Unfair subsidizing programme
- 3- Weak market regulations and management
- 4- Absence of post harvesting programme
- 5- Lack of manufacturing for agricultural products
- 6- Weak infrastructure for projects
- 7- Administration and ownership problems
- 8- Lack of data and information
- 9- Weak investment in agriculture sector

### *4. Governmental roles (Expert interview)*

To supplement, the two interviewees at the micro-level were also not satisfied on the governmental policies and plans. What was very interesting, from the lower management level to the upper management level, was the scale of the satisfaction raising from two score to seven score. This admitted that the top-down approach requires the policy-makers to defend their plans or policies.

## **CHAPTER SIX: CONCLUSION AND RECOMMENDATION**

### **6.1 Conclusion**

Human migration is defined as a change of a person's place from his or her origin place to a destination place. It occurs for a reason and that reason is called a factor. For the diverse existence of the factors, migration is categorized in several patterns. It is categorized based on pull and push factors, internal and external, according to duration, based on choice and migrations by levels.

Human migrations in the rural areas of the KR includes two of these patterns. From 1970 to 1991, migrations occurred in the KR by force from the government, which is defined as a forced migration. However, another pattern was migration of the push and pull factors. These migrations have had positive and negative impacts on the villager's life, and additionally created a significant change in their lives. They changed their work culture, source of income, educational level, lifestyle and family size. The pull and push factors were from financial, natural, physical, human and social capital assets and in addition, security, institutional performance and market problems (see Tab-51). More specifically, the factors are described as follows:

1. Financial capital assets were for income and working capital<sup>45</sup>
2. Natural capital assets were for ownership of land and natural view of this area
3. Physical capital assets were for essential infrastructure for the inhabitants and farming projects
4. Security was for the threats of the PKK and the Turkish army and threats of Mine. In some villages, there was a threat from battle and existence of the PKK and the Turkish army, which is not the focus of this study.
5. Governmental efforts were for the weak management of the local and imported products, weak subsidizing and timing, lack of data, weak investment, weak extension centres.
6. Social capital assets were for the social networks and social controls and, in addition, the value of family
7. Human capital assets were for unemployment, labor force, and skilled labor
8. Market problems for selling products, market demand and surplus, and post harvesting

The financial capital assets were the most highlighted capital asset among the other assets and

---

<sup>45</sup> The capital of a business which is used in its day-to-day trading operations, calculates as the current assets minus the current liabilities.



these were for income. The villagers had problems with their income in their areas, which motivated most of them to migrate. This means, villagers had unacceptable income or were looking for better income in the destination place. The income by the villagers had a deeper explanation. It is an amount of income that secures and satisfies their lives. The secured income is meant to be an income that must be calculated as a retirement when this person stops working because of having reached a particular age and is incapable of working. In addition, the satisfied income meant, this amount of money must be utilized for a person's needs or his or her family needs. In the units of this study, this amount has been calculated and it was on average \$137 (see Tab-52). Critical income level (CIL) is the minimum secured satisfied income. In this sense, this amount is the base income earning for someone that must obtain it to live a normal life in the rural area of the Kurdistan Region.

*Table 52- Average CIL between Mergasur & Bahrka*

|   | Place    | CIL \$ | Average income \$ |
|---|----------|--------|-------------------|
| 1 | Mergasur | \$132  | \$137             |
| 2 | Bahrka   | \$142  |                   |

*Source: Author's own construct (2020)*

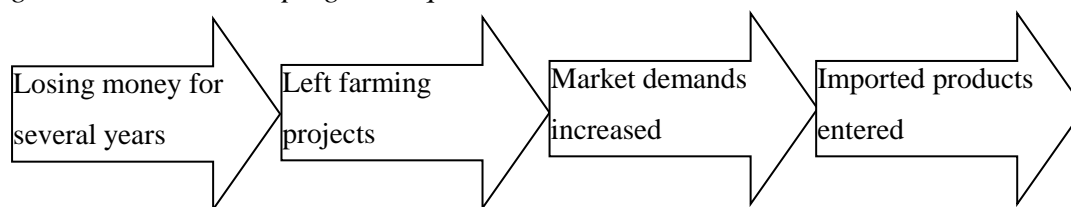
Nonetheless, the CIL was significant with a number of issues, such issues as gender, education level, availability and equity of the capital assets, government's performance and marital status (see Tab-29, 32). The results showed that both the social segments, females and males, from different graduation levels were ready to migrate when they do not have this CIL in their current areas. Moreover, those who were concerned about the capital assets and were feeling that they are not enough and not distributed fairly by the governmental institutions or who were married, were ready to migrate elsewhere when this income is was achieved. And this means most social segment were considered the CIL as the top prior issue for their lives.

On the other hand, although the government has spent years and massive budgets for returning villagers and for raising income, it was not successful. What has been lacking was a proper demonstration of the policies for managing the capital assets to target the CIL. As identified in this research, there was no programme for rural sustainable development and there was not a clear structure and approach for planning and policy-making and a lack of integration of the governmental plans. This means that the government was not well aware about the villager's problems. And this came from lack of data and information about rural areas and came from positioning non-qualified persons at different levels of the governmental structure at the middle and top levels. During the interview, the expert interviewees could not explain the core issues of

the problem and did not provide a clear combination of the variables. The research has found that the combination of infrastructure, satisfactory income, policy and migration in Mergasur are correlated together and significant as well (see Appendix-6). However, this hypothesis was not true in Bahrka (see Appendix 11). It can be assumed that the participants in Bahrka have already a better infrastructure and could meet most of their needs for themselves and their family members.

All of the mentioned problems and deficits have resulted in significant damages to the villager's lives and specifically the farmers' projects. The farmers were affected strongly by the revenue. They were waiting for a profit from their projects, but were losing their money for years. This pushed farmers to leave their farming projects, and then this has increased the market demand and attracted the importers to bring non-local products to the markets, which can cause a market dumping (see Fig-46).

Figure 46- Market dumping consequence



Source: Author's own construct (2020)

For a better explanation, the strengths, weaknesses, opportunities and threats in Mergasur and Bahrka are as follows in Tab- 53, 54 and 55. The strengths and weaknesses are from the micro-environment<sup>46</sup>, which were formulated from the pull and push factors and the opportunities and the threats are placed regarding the macro-environment<sup>47</sup>, I have constructed regarding my experience.

Table 53- SWOT analysis of the villager's point of view in Mergasur about Mergasur

| Strength   | Weakness   |
|--|--|
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Fertile land for orchard, bee breeding, poultry, goat and cow breeding</li> <li>• Young (18-35) labor force</li> <li>• Graduated young generation</li> <li>• Stunning natural view and climate</li> <li>• Land ownership</li> </ul> | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Low income</li> <li>• Unvaried income</li> <li>• Non-feasible projects</li> <li>• Dumped market</li> <li>• Lack of new farming skills</li> <li>• Unfair distribution of assets</li> </ul> |

<sup>46</sup> Micro-environment are factors or elements, which are immediate environment and affect its performance and decision-making; these elements include suppliers, competitors, marketing intermediaries, customers and publics.

<sup>47</sup> Macro-environment. the major uncontrollable, external forces (economic, demographic, technological, natural, social and cultural, legal and political) which influence a firm's decision making and have an impact upon its performance.

| Strength   | Weakness   |
|--|--|
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Old skilled farmers</li> <li>• Strong social networks and family's relationship</li> <li>• Diverse income</li> </ul>  | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Land scarcity for farming</li> <li>• Unregistered lands</li> <li>• Weak infrastructure for the essential needs</li> <li>• Weak infrastructure for the projects</li> <li>• Future of the new generation</li> <li>• Weak governmental roles</li> <li>• Top-down approach</li> <li>• Strong social networks</li> <li>• Lack of universities and institutions</li> <li>• No retirement program</li> <li>• Lack of data</li> <li>• Lack of NGOs and companies participation</li> <li>• Lack of qualification at the managerial level</li> <li>• Lack of capital money</li> </ul> |
| Opportunity  | Threats  |
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Investing in the agriculture sector</li> <li>• Using the local human and local natural capital assets and from other areas</li> <li>• Developing agriculture and the tourism sectors</li> <li>• Reaching food security</li> </ul> | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Physical security by the PKK and The Turkish army</li> <li>• Area evacuation</li> <li>• Food security</li> <li>• Corruption</li> </ul>  |

Source: Author's own construct (2020)

Table 54- SWOT analysis of the villager's point of view in Bahrka about Mergasur

| Strength   | Weakness  |
|--|---|
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Social networks and family' relationship</li> <li>• Land ownership</li> </ul> | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Low income</li> <li>• Weak infrastructure for the essential needs</li> <li>• Weak infrastructure for the projects</li> <li>• Non-feasible projects</li> <li>• Transportation problems</li> <li>• Lack of universities and institutions</li> <li>• Weak governmental roles</li> <li>• Lack of post-harvesting and food processing</li> <li>• No retirement program</li> </ul> |

| Opportunity   | Threats   |
|---|---|
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Reverse-migration</li> <li>• Using the local human and local natural capital assets and from other areas</li> <li>• Decreasing human density in Bahrka</li> <li>• Increasing the reverse of investment for the villagers and the government</li> </ul> | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Physical security by the PKK and The Turkish army</li> </ul> |

Source: Author's own construct (2020)

Table 55- Sum of the SWOT analysis of the villager's point of view in Mergasur and Bahrka about Mergasur

| Strength  | Weakness  |
|---|---|
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Fertile land for orchard, bee breeding, poultry, goat and cow breeding</li> <li>• Young (18-35) labor force</li> <li>• Graduated young generation</li> <li>• Stunning natural view and climate</li> <li>• Land ownership</li> <li>• Old skilled farmers</li> <li>• Strong social networks and family's relationship</li> <li>• Diverse income</li> </ul> | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Low income</li> <li>• Unvaried income</li> <li>• Non-feasible projects</li> <li>• Dumped market</li> <li>• Lack of new farming skills</li> <li>• Unfair distribution of assets</li> <li>• Land scarcity for farming</li> <li>• Unregistered lands</li> <li>• Weak infrastructure for the essential needs</li> <li>• Weak infrastructure for the projects</li> <li>• Future of the new generation</li> <li>• Weak governmental roles</li> <li>• Top-down approach</li> <li>• Strong social networks</li> <li>• No retirement program</li> <li>• Lack of data</li> <li>• Lack of qualification at the managerial level</li> <li>• Lack of universities and institutions</li> <li>• Lack of post-harvesting and food processing</li> <li>• Lack of NGOs and companies participation</li> <li>• Lack of capital money</li> </ul> |

| Opportunity  | Threats   |
|--|---|
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Investing in the agriculture sector</li> <li>• Using the local human and local natural capital assets and from other areas</li> <li>• Using human capital assets from other areas</li> <li>• Developing agriculture and the tourism sector Reverse-migration</li> <li>• Decreasing population density in Bahrka</li> <li>• Increasing the reverse of investment for the villagers and the government</li> </ul> | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Physical security by the PKK and The Turkish army</li> <li>• Area evacuation</li> <li>• Food security</li> <li>• Corruption</li> </ul> |

*Source: Author's own construct (2020)*

## 6.2 Recommendations

Rural sustainable development programs are programs that involve the government in collaboration with several stakeholder and actors that have been planned for a goal or several goals via several objectives. These programs improve social, economic and environmental factors via improving the quality of life, achieving basic needs and saving people from poverty and enable better land management (see Section 3.3.2). Through these programs and the improvement of the social, economic and environmental factors, the income channels can be improved as well. In this study, understanding the CIL is the main goal. The CIL was a minimum monthly secured satisfied income per person and it was \$137 (see Tab-55). The study determined that there were a set of factors that affect the CIL and has addressed these factors as weaknesses, which have been analysed by SWOT tools (see Tab-56,57). The next step in this process was turning these weaknesses to strengths via sustainable development programs. As a point of reference, the opportunities and threats, which were placed in the SWOT, are not the primary concern in this study, but remain as issues for further research. Based on the impacts, the strengths were prioritized as follows in Table 55 (see Tab-55 for SWOT and 56 for prioritization of strengths).

Table 56- Prioritizing the strengths

| Strength  | Importance <sup>48</sup> | Rating <sup>49</sup> | Score <sup>50</sup> |
|---|--------------------------|----------------------|---------------------|
| Fertile land for orchards, bee breeding, poultry, goat and cow breeding | 0.17                     | 2                    | 0.34                |
| Young (18-35) labor force   | 0.05                     | 3                    | 0.15                |
| Graduated young generation  | 0.05                     | 3                    | 0.15                |
| Stunning natural view and climate                                       | 0.17                     | 1                    | 0.17                |
| Land ownership  | 0.17                     | 2                    | 0.34                |
| Old skilled farmers   | 0.05                     | 2                    | 0.1                 |
| Strong social networks and family's relationship                        | 0.07                     | 2                    | 0.14                |
| Diverse income  | 0.34                     | 2                    | 1.02                |

Source: Author's own construct (2020)

Table 57-Rearrangement of the prioritizing of the strengths

| Strength  | Importance | Rating | Score |
|---|------------|--------|-------|
| Diverse income  | 0.34       | 3      | 1.02  |
| Land ownership  | 0.17       | 2      | 0.34  |
| Fertile land for orchards, bee breeding, poultry, goat and cow breeding | 0.17       | 2      | 0.34  |
| Stunning natural view and climate                                       | 0.17       | 1      | 0.17  |
| Graduated young generation  | 0.05       | 3      | 0.15  |
| Young labor force   | 0.05       | 3      | 0.15  |
| Strong social networks and family's relationship                        | 0.07       | 2      | 0.14  |
| Old skilled farmers   | 0.05       | 2      | 0.1   |

Source: Author's own construct (2020)

Similarly, the weaknesses were prioritized and scored with the same concept as was applied for the strengths (see Tab-58 and 59).

<sup>48</sup> How many times have been repeated by the villagers during interviews. A number from 0.01 (not important) to 1.0 (very important) should be assigned to each strength and weakness (see Tab-46).

<sup>49</sup> A score from 1 to 3 is given to each factor to indicate whether it is a major (3) or a minor (1) strength

<sup>50</sup> Score is a result of importance multiplied by rating. It allows prioritizing the strengths and weaknesses.

Table 58-Prioritizing the weaknesses

| Weakness                                      | Importance | Rating | Score |
|---|------------|--------|-------|
| Low income                                    | 0.34       | 3      | 1.02  |
| Unvaried income                               | 0.34       | 3      | 1.02  |
| Non-feasible projects                         | 0.34       | 3      | 1.02  |
| Dumped market                                 | 0.03       | 3      | 0.09  |
| Lack of new farming skills                    | 0.13       | 2      | 0.26  |
| Unfair assets distribution                    | 0.10       | 3      | 0.3   |
| Land scarcity for farming                     | 0.17       | 1      | 0.17  |
| Unregistered lands                            | 0.10       | 1      | 0.10  |
| Weak infrastructure for essential needs       | 0.13       | 3      | 0.39  |
| Weak infrastructure for projects              | 0.13       | 3      | 0.39  |
| Future of the new generation                  | 0.10       | 3      | 0.30  |
| Weak governmental roles                       | 0.10       | 3      | 0.30  |
| Top-down approach                             | 0.10       | 3      | 0.30  |
| Strong social networks                        | 0.07       | 2      | 0.14  |
| No retirement program                         | 0.34       | 3      | 1.02  |
| Lack of NGOs and companies' participation     | 0.10       | 2      | 0.20  |
| Lack of qualification at the managerial level | 0.05       | 2      | 0.10  |
| Lack of universities and institutions         | 0.13       | 2      | 0.26  |
| Lack of post-harvesting and food processing   | 0.03       | 3      | 0.09  |
| Lack of data                                  | 0.10       | 3      | 0.30  |
| Lack of capital money                         | 0.34       | 2      | 0.68  |

Source: Author's own construct (2020)

Table 59-Rearrangement of the prioritizing of the weaknesses

| Weakness   | Importance | Rating | Score | Variable in the C.F.W <sup>51</sup> |
|------------|------------|--------|-------|-------------------------------------|
| Low income | 0.34       | 3      | 1.02  | CIL                                 |

<sup>51</sup> Conceptual Framework

| Weakness                                      | Importance | Rating | Score | Variable in the C.F.W <sup>51</sup> |
|---|------------|--------|-------|-------------------------------------|
| Unvaried income                               | 0.34       | 3      | 1.02  | CIL                                 |
| Non-feasible projects                         | 0.34       | 3      | 1.02  | Sectorial development               |
| No retirement program                         | 0.34       | 3      | 1.02  | CIL                                 |
| Lack of capital money                         | 0.34       | 2      | 0.68  | Financial capital assets            |
| Weak infrastructure for projects              | 0.13       | 3      | 0.39  | Physical capital assets             |
| Weak infrastructure for essential needs       | 0.13       | 3      | 0.39  | Physical capital assets             |
| Future of the new generation                  | 0.10       | 3      | 0.30  | Sectorial development               |
| Unfair assets distribution                    | 0.10       | 3      | 0.30  | Capital assets distribution         |
| Weak governmental roles                       | 0.10       | 3      | 0.30  | Board of policy-making              |
| Top-down approach                             | 0.10       | 3      | 0.30  | Board of policy-making              |
| Lack of data                                  | 0.10       | 3      | 0.30  | Board of policy-making              |
| Lack of universities and institutions         | 0.13       | 2      | 0.26  | Physical capital assets             |
| Lack of new farming skills                    | 0.13       | 2      | 0.26  | Human capital assets                |
| Lack of NGOs and companies' participation     | 0.10       | 2      | 0.20  | Board of policy-making              |
| Land scarcity for farming                     | 0.17       | 1      | 0.17  | Natural capital assets              |
| Strong social networks                        | 0.07       | 2      | 0.14  | Social capital assets               |
| Lack of qualification at the managerial level | 0.05       | 2      | 0.10  | Human capital assets                |
| Unregistered lands                            | 0.10       | 1      | 0.10  | Board of policy-making              |
| Lack of post-harvesting and food processing   | 0.03       | 3      | 0.09  | Sectorial development               |
| Dumped market                                 | 0.03       | 3      | 0.09  | Sectorial development               |

*Source: Author's own construct (2020)*

The research comes to the question, how can the villagers reach the CIL at which there is an accumulation of weaknesses and where should the CIL be placed?

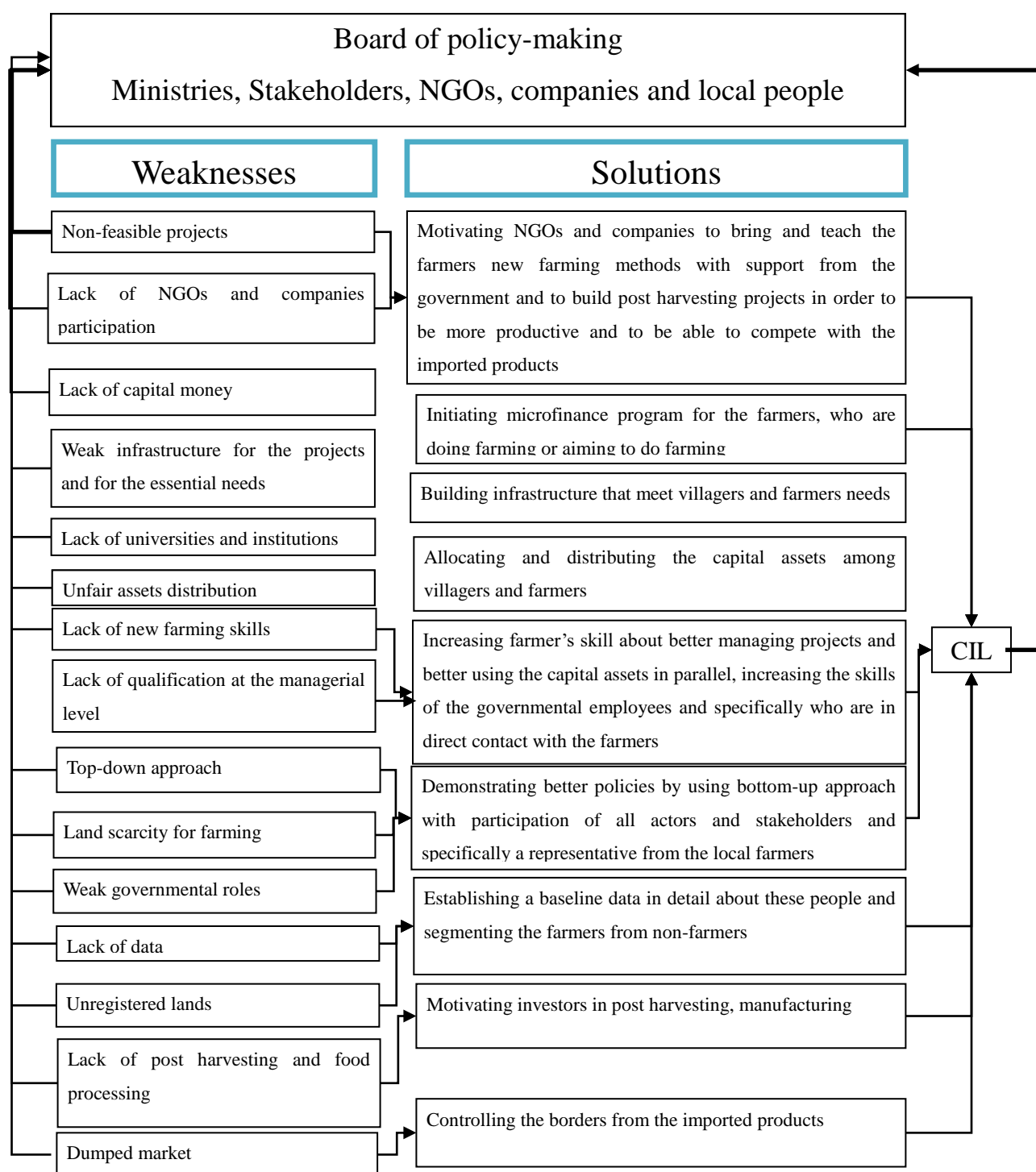
From the conceptual framework, each weakness was connected to a variable or variables and was turned into a strength or solution. The conceptual framework has been widely constructed and can be used in any rural area, but it must be preceded by clarifying the problems or weakness and then be based on achieving a solution to employ.

Fortunately, most of the weaknesses can be turned to strengths by using proper development programmes via a proper policy or policies. In the figure below, each weakness or problem has



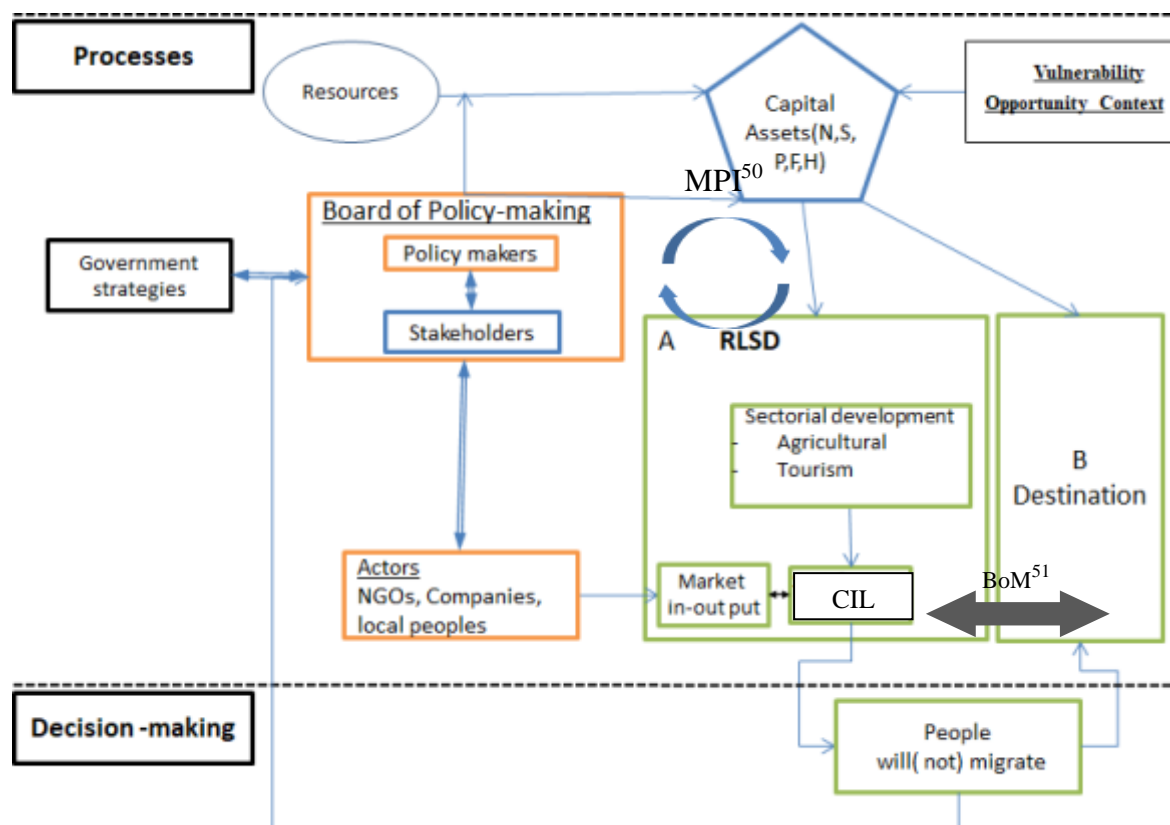
been turned into a strength or solution regarding this research experience (see Fig-47). However, before the generalization, this turning to a strength or weakness must be looped and evaluated in the main conceptual framework until reaching the CIL, and can then be generalized for other areas (see Fig-48). This process starts from converting the internal or external resources to capital assets and then distributing and raising accessibility to be used by the villagers until they achieve CIL.

Figure 47- Turning the weaknesses to strengths to reach the CIL



Source: Author's own construct (2020)

Figure 48- Re-formulation of the conceptual framework



Source: Author's own construct (2020)

## 6.2.1 Action Plans for Enhancing the Farms and Achieve the CIL

### 1- Start-up of the pilot project

The reformulated conceptual framework should be used at a small scale, such as a pilot project (see Fig-48). In the case of this research, Mergasur is a preferred case to use in applying this conceptual framework because data and information were already gathered during the study about this area, making the process of applying the framework easier to be managed. The pilot project starts by setting up two teams. The first team is for administrating the pilot project and the other team will be the key staff who will act as the board for policy-making for demonstration and re-demonstration of the policies, and will also follow the implementation of the policies. The first team includes those people who are responsible to administer the pilot project<sup>54</sup> and approve it after evaluation of the pilot project. The second team includes farmer representatives, local

<sup>52</sup> The MIP refers to Monitoring Policy Impacts which was used in the policy-making capacity development for food, agriculture, and rural development (see Fig-14).

<sup>53</sup> BoM refers to the Balance of Migration, a balance which was affected by the pull and push factors within which this study dealt with the CIL as a driven factor (see Fig-3).

<sup>54</sup> After the pilot project is done and succeeded, this project will be approved and generalized for the other areas

administrative and agricultural extension persons, as well as representatives from the ministries of agriculture, electric, road, construction, planning and tourism, finance, interior, and additionally companies, banks and NGOs. All of these people will be brought to intensive training courses to:

- Become aware of the goal of the pilot and the approved projects
- Work as a team and share ideas
- Follow and evaluate the project process

The teams contribute to turning the resources into capital assets, and then allocate the assets to the farmers in proper ways to reduce their project costs or improve their selling prices.

## *2- Gathering data about this area*

Implementing the pilot project requires more data to be gathered, e.g. the number of farmers and farms in the respective area. The data about farmers will be focused on family size, age of each family members, current job, income level, education level, marital status, and skills or qualifications of each member. The information about the farms would focus on farm location and soil types, water availability for farms, energy sources such as electric, working capital, logistic issues and the capacity of the local market and the markets near to this area. In this way we can calculate the production costs and the selling price to calculate the revenue of each farm and income of each farmer household's member. In case there is an income gap regarding the achieving the CIL, which was \$137 (see Tab-48), this must be modified and covered until the CIL is reached. The CIL can be reached by reducing costs of the projects or by increasing the selling price in the markets. These two issues will be managed via policies.

## **6.2.2 Generalization of the Success of the Pilot Project**

Given the successful implementation of the pilot project, the same strategies and plans will be applied in the other rural areas in the KR with a change of the board of the policy-makers to reflect the local people or local institutions.

## **6.2.3 Retirement Law for the Farmers**

As previously mentioned, there is no retirement program for farmers who are doing farming in the Kurdistan Region. To motivate farmers to continue with their farms and to encourage their children to do farming, there should be a retirement program established by a new law for farmers retirement. This should be cast into a law and approved by the parliament and then be translated to government regulation. The law must be focused explicitly on these the farmers who are tilling their land.

## Appendices

### Appendix-1: Questionnaire form for Villagers

Dear villager

As a doctoral candidate, I chose your area to be my unit case in my study. It is your chance to answer in a few minutes the below questions properly in order to explore your problems, and then, to be considered in the next governmental policies. Thanks for your kind participation.

|                |  |                     |  |                            |  |
|----------------|--|---------------------|--|----------------------------|--|
| Age            |  | Current job         |  | Form number                |  |
| Marital status |  | Education level     |  | Other income source        |  |
| Family No.     |  | Family income/month |  | Satisfactory income        |  |
| Place of Born  |  | Current residence   |  | Owning land m <sup>2</sup> |  |

| Test of the conceptual framework |   |                          |          |         |       |          |         |
|----------------------------------|---|--------------------------|----------|---------|-------|----------|---------|
| #                                | Question  | S.disagree <sup>55</sup> | Disagree | Neutral | Agree | S. agree | T.Score |
| 1                                | Land and water are accounted as the most important resources for agriculture and tourism.                                       |                          |          |         |       |          |         |
| 2                                | People networks, membership, relationships of trust and access to wider institutions of society are considered important to me. |                          |          |         |       |          |         |
| 3                                | Skills, knowledge and health are needed to pursue different livelihood strategies   |                          |          |         |       |          |         |
| 4                                | Infrastructure such as transport, shelter, water networks, energy & fuel, ; and communications are considered important to me   |                          |          |         |       |          |         |
| 5                                | Money from savings, supplies or regular remittance are considered important to me   |                          |          |         |       |          |         |
| 6                                | Government plays a big role about the above mentioned issues to be more accessible  |                          |          |         |       |          |         |
| 7                                | The market channels is a gate to increase my income   |                          |          |         |       |          |         |

<sup>55</sup> S = Strongly

| 8   | Participating NGOs and people representing are crucial for policymaking  |            |          |         |       |          |         |
|---|--|------------|----------|---------|-------|----------|---------|
| Villagers reflection towards diverse issues |  |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| #   | Question   | S.disagree | Disagree | Neutral | Agree | S. agree | T.Score |
| 9   | Government plays a big role about the above mentioned issues to be more accessible   |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| 10  | Government has participated the local people for capital assets policies   |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| 11  | The capital assets are fairly distributed on us  |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| 12  | The government are influenced positively on my market accessibility  |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| 13  | The NGOs are existed and influenced positively on my project   |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| Migration Attitude                          |  |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| 14  | If I or my family's income not reached the satisfaction, certainly I will try to leave my origin place to elsewhere, where I can find my satisfactory income |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| 15  | If I decided to leave my origin place, I will try to migrate to those places that are nearby my origin   |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| 16  | If the nearby places are not suitable to me, I will going to a place farther until I achieve my satisfactory income  |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| Test of the Hypotheses                      |  |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| 17  | Are you satisfied with your infrastructure such as transport, shelter, water networks, energy & fuel, and communications                                     |            |          |         |       |          |         |
| 18  | Are you satisfied with the infrastructure?   |            |          |         |       |          |         |

## Appendix-2: Questionnaire form for Expert-Interview Questions

1. What is your name?
2. Where do you work?
3. At what level of management you are working or worked?
4. What level of education you have reached?
5. How long are you working in this position or worked?
6. How the policies were formulated for the rural areas and what was your role?
7. How the policies outputs in your sector were, were they acceptable?
8. Why migration happened and how villagers can be motivated to return?
9. Extra information?

## Appendix-2: Income impacts migration in Mergasur

```
EXAMINE VARIABLES=Q14 /PLOT BOXPLOT STEMLEAF HISTOGRAM /COMPARE VARIABLES
/PERCENTILES (5, 10, 25, 50, 75, 90, 95) HAVERAGE /STATISTICS DESCRIPTIVES
/CINTERVAL 95 /MISSING LISTWISE /NOTOTAL.
```

### Explore

#### Notes

|                        |                                |   |
|------------------------|--------------------------------|---|
| Output Created         |                                | 14.04.2019 10:43  |
| Comments               |                                |   |
| Input                  | Data                           | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur\Main-MERG 166.sav |
|                        | Active Dataset                 | DataSet1  |
|                        | Filter                         | <none>  |
|                        | Weight                         | <none>  |
|                        | Split File                     | <none>  |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File | 192   |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing          | User-defined missing values for dependent variables are treated as missing.                                   |
|                        | Cases Used                     | Statistics are based on cases with no missing values for any dependent variable or factor used.               |

|           |   |
|-----------|---|
| Syntax    | EXAMINE<br>VARIABLES=Q14<br>/PLOT BOXPLOT<br>STEMLEAF<br>HISTOGRAM<br>/COMPARE<br>VARIABLES<br><br>/PERCENTILES(5,10,2<br>5,50,75,90,95)<br>HAVERAGE<br>/STATISTICS<br>DESCRIPTIVES<br>/INTERVAL 95<br>/MISSING LISTWISE<br>/NOTOTAL. |
| Resources | Processor Time 0:00:01.266<br>Elapsed Time 0:00:16.852  |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav

#### Case Processing Summary

|     | Cases |         |         |         |       |         |
|-----|-------|---------|---------|---------|-------|---------|
|     | Valid |         | Missing |         | Total |         |
|     | N     | Percent | N       | Percent | N     | Percent |
| Q14 | 166   | 86,5%   | 26      | 13,5%   | 192   | 100,0%  |

#### Descriptives

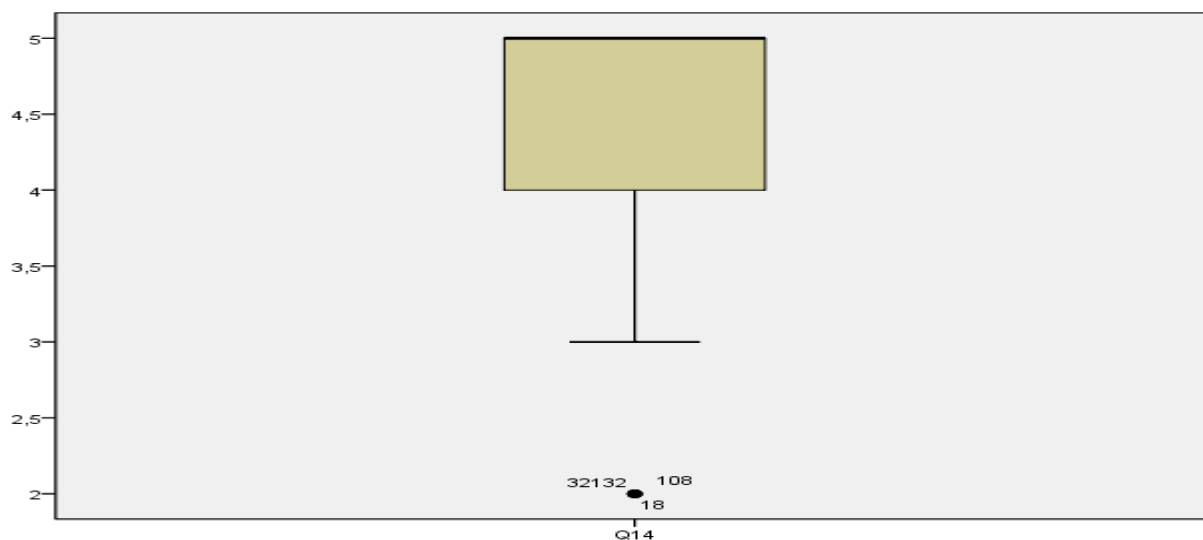
|     |                                  | Statistic | Std. Error |
|-----|----------------------------------|-----------|------------|
| Q14 | Mean                             | 4,52      | ,052       |
|     | 95% Confidence Interval for Mean | 4,42      |            |
|     | Lower Bound                      | 4,63      |            |
|     | Upper Bound                      |           |            |
|     | 5% Trimmed Mean                  | 4,61      |            |
|     | Median                           | 5,00      |            |
|     | Variance                         | ,445      |            |
|     | Std. Deviation                   | ,667      |            |
|     | Minimum                          | 2         |            |
|     | Maximum                          | 5         |            |
|     | Range                            | 3         |            |
|     | Interquartile Range              | 1         |            |
|     | Skewness                         | -1,578    | ,188       |
|     | Kurtosis                         | 3,089     | ,375       |

#### Percentiles

|                                |     | Percentiles |      |      |      |      |      |      |
|--------------------------------|-----|-------------|------|------|------|------|------|------|
|                                |     | 5           | 10   | 25   | 50   | 75   | 90   | 95   |
| Weighted Average(Definition 1) | Q14 | 3,35        | 4,00 | 4,00 | 5,00 | 5,00 | 5,00 | 5,00 |
| Tukey's Hinges                 | Q14 |             |      | 4,00 | 5,00 | 5,00 |      |      |







### Appendix-3: Extent of the incomes in Mergasur

| Form_No | Satisfied/\$ |     |         |      |
|---------|--------------|-----|---------|------|
| 152     | 160000       | 132 | Max     | 1405 |
| 124     | 162500       | 134 | Average | 347  |
| 127     | 165000       | 136 | Mini    | 132  |
| 138     | 166667       | 138 |         | 769  |
| 8       | 166667       | 138 |         |      |
| 34      | 170000       | 140 |         |      |
| 139     | 170000       | 140 |         |      |
| 17      | 170000       | 140 |         |      |
| 125     | 171429       | 142 |         |      |
| 116     | 175000       | 145 |         |      |
| 156     | 176000       | 145 |         |      |
| 7       | 176250       | 146 |         |      |
| 140     | 180000       | 149 |         |      |
| 103     | 183333       | 152 |         |      |
| 160     | 185714       | 153 |         |      |
| 126     | 185714       | 153 |         |      |
| 12      | 190000       | 157 |         |      |
| 122     | 192000       | 159 |         |      |
| 118     | 192500       | 159 |         |      |
| 85      | 194000       | 160 |         |      |
| 102     | 200000       | 165 |         |      |
| 133     | 200000       | 165 |         |      |
| 147     | 200000       | 165 |         |      |
| 155     | 200000       | 165 |         |      |
| 113     | 200000       | 165 |         |      |

| Form_No | Not Satisfied/\$ |     |         |     |
|---------|------------------|-----|---------|-----|
| 15      | 50000            | 41  | Max     | 131 |
| 29      | 50000            | 41  | Average | 84  |
| 30      | 50000            | 41  | Mini    | 41  |
| 33      | 57143            | 47  |         | 86  |
| 35      | 60000            | 50  |         |     |
| 36      | 60000            | 50  |         |     |
| 37      | 64286            | 53  |         |     |
| 38      | 64286            | 53  |         |     |
| 39      | 66667            | 55  |         |     |
| 40      | 85714            | 71  |         |     |
| 41      | 105000           | 87  |         |     |
| 44      | 111429           | 92  |         |     |
| 89      | 112500           | 93  |         |     |
| 90      | 112500           | 93  |         |     |
| 92      | 125000           | 103 |         |     |
| 129     | 128571           | 106 |         |     |
| 134     | 137500           | 114 |         |     |
| 135     | 141667           | 117 |         |     |
| 137     | 142857           | 118 |         |     |
| 145     | 150000           | 124 |         |     |
| 150     | 156250           | 129 |         |     |
| 151     | 157143           | 130 |         |     |
| 153     | 158333           | 131 |         |     |

|     |        |     |
|-----|--------|-----|
| 128 | 200000 | 165 |
| 142 | 212500 | 176 |
| 83  | 212500 | 176 |
| 149 | 214286 | 177 |
| 13  | 214286 | 177 |
| 119 | 216667 | 179 |
| 94  | 216667 | 179 |
| 111 | 217500 | 180 |
| 84  | 223333 | 185 |
| 136 | 225000 | 186 |
| 101 | 225000 | 186 |
| 20  | 231250 | 191 |
| 24  | 233333 | 193 |
| 25  | 233333 | 193 |
| 110 | 235714 | 195 |
| 82  | 237500 | 196 |
| 93  | 240000 | 198 |
| 157 | 240000 | 198 |
| 18  | 241667 | 200 |
| 16  | 242857 | 201 |
| 50  | 248000 | 205 |
| 88  | 250000 | 207 |
| 95  | 250000 | 207 |
| 100 | 250000 | 207 |
| 159 | 250000 | 207 |
| 19  | 250000 | 207 |
| 27  | 257143 | 213 |
| 123 | 260000 | 215 |
| 130 | 260000 | 215 |
| 158 | 260000 | 215 |
| 21  | 260000 | 215 |
| 154 | 270000 | 223 |
| 105 | 271429 | 224 |
| 114 | 275000 | 227 |
| 77  | 277500 | 229 |
| 81  | 283333 | 234 |
| 164 | 283333 | 234 |
| 107 | 285714 | 236 |
| 75  | 290000 | 240 |
| 96  | 300000 | 248 |
| 161 | 300000 | 248 |
| 165 | 300000 | 248 |
| 106 | 314286 | 260 |
| 120 | 323333 | 267 |
| 112 | 323333 | 267 |

|     |        |     |
|-----|--------|-----|
| 143 | 325000 | 269 |
| 46  | 325000 | 269 |
| 67  | 333333 | 275 |
| 87  | 333333 | 275 |
| 91  | 333333 | 275 |
| 115 | 333333 | 275 |
| 99  | 333333 | 275 |
| 66  | 335000 | 277 |
| 11  | 340000 | 281 |
| 14  | 350000 | 289 |
| 22  | 350000 | 289 |
| 48  | 350000 | 289 |
| 144 | 350000 | 289 |
| 148 | 350000 | 289 |
| 9   | 360000 | 298 |
| 43  | 362500 | 300 |
| 121 | 362500 | 300 |
| 71  | 366667 | 303 |
| 72  | 375000 | 310 |
| 74  | 375000 | 310 |
| 58  | 375000 | 310 |
| 97  | 380000 | 314 |
| 10  | 380000 | 314 |
| 28  | 383333 | 317 |
| 131 | 383333 | 317 |
| 47  | 383333 | 317 |
| 109 | 385000 | 318 |
| 78  | 385000 | 318 |
| 104 | 400000 | 331 |
| 31  | 400000 | 331 |
| 117 | 408333 | 337 |
| 26  | 412500 | 341 |
| 108 | 416667 | 344 |
| 42  | 420000 | 347 |
| 49  | 425000 | 351 |
| 86  | 425000 | 351 |
| 56  | 428571 | 354 |
| 51  | 429000 | 355 |
| 57  | 430000 | 355 |
| 23  | 430000 | 355 |
| 76  | 433333 | 358 |
| 163 | 433333 | 358 |
| 98  | 440000 | 364 |
| 32  | 450000 | 372 |
| 80  | 460000 | 380 |

|     |         |      |
|-----|---------|------|
| 132 | 475000  | 393  |
| 146 | 500000  | 413  |
| 52  | 500000  | 413  |
| 45  | 550000  | 455  |
| 55  | 600000  | 496  |
| 61  | 600000  | 496  |
| 141 | 600000  | 496  |
| 65  | 650000  | 537  |
| 162 | 666667  | 551  |
| 53  | 666667  | 551  |
| 63  | 725000  | 599  |
| 69  | 750000  | 620  |
| 68  | 750000  | 620  |
| 73  | 800000  | 661  |
| 79  | 850000  | 702  |
| 54  | 966000  | 798  |
| 59  | 1250000 | 1033 |
| 60  | 1300000 | 1074 |
| 62  | 1500000 | 1240 |
| 64  | 1500000 | 1240 |
| 70  | 1500000 | 1240 |
| 160 | 1700000 | 1405 |
| 161 | 1250000 | 1033 |
| 162 | 1300000 | 1074 |
| 163 | 1500000 | 1240 |
| 164 | 1500000 | 1240 |
| 165 | 1500000 | 1240 |

## Appendix-4: Factors impact on satisfactory income in Mergasur

### (Correlation)

```
GET FILE='C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd
Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav'. CORRELATIONS
/VARIABLES=Gender Age M.Status Job EDLevel Family_Size
Level_Income_Satisfaction Land_Lord Q1 Q2 Q3 Q4 Q5 Q6 Q7 Q8 Q9 Q10 Q11 Q12
Q13 Q14 Q17 Q18 /PRINT=TWOTAIL NOSIG /STATISTICS DESCRIPTIVES XPROD
/MISSING=PAIRWISE.
```

### Correlations

#### Notes

|                |            |
|----------------|------------|
| Output Created | 18.04.2019 |
| Comments       |            |

|                        |                                |  |
|------------------------|--------------------------------|--|
| Input                  | Data                           | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav   |
|                        | Active Dataset                 | DataSet1   |
|                        | Filter                         | <none>   |
|                        | Weight                         | <none>   |
|                        | Split File                     | <none>   |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File | 192,00   |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing          | User-defined missing values are treated as missing.  |
|                        | Cases Used                     | Statistics for each pair of variables are based on all the cases with valid data for that pair.  |
| Syntax                 |                                | CORRELATIONS<br>/VARIABLES=Gender Age M.Status Job EDLevel Family_Size Level_Income_Satisfaction Land_Lord Q1 Q2 Q3 Q4 Q5 Q6 Q7 Q8 Q9 Q10 Q11 Q12 Q13 Q14 Q17 Q18<br>/PRINT=TWOTAIL NOSIG<br>/STATISTICS<br>DESCRIPTIVES XPROD<br>/MISSING=PAIRWISE. |
| Resources              | Processor Time                 | 0:00:00.063  |
|                        | Elapsed Time                   | 0:00:00.045  |

#### Descriptive Statistics

|                                      | Mean    | Std. Deviation | N      |
|--------------------------------------|---------|----------------|--------|
| Gender                               | ,51     | 0,50           | 166,00 |
| Age                                  | 32,11   | 9,43           | 166,00 |
| Marital status                       | ,50     | 0,50           | 166,00 |
| Job                                  | 1,23    | 1,22           | 166,00 |
| Education level                      | 1,83    | 1,24           | 166,00 |
| Family size                          | 4,39    | 1,99           | 166,00 |
| Level of income satisfaction         | ,15     | 0,36           | 166,00 |
| Landlord                             | 1295,78 | 2010,44        | 166,00 |
| Natural capital assets are important | 4,61    | 0,49           | 166,00 |
| Social capital assets are important  | 4,52    | 0,58           | 166,00 |
| Human capital assets are important   | 4,62    | 0,49           | 166,00 |
| Physical capital assets are          | 4,67    | 0,57           | 166,00 |

|  |      |      |        |
|--|------|------|--------|
| important  |      |      |        |
| Financial capital assets are important               | 4,70 | 0,47 | 166,00 |
| Government is playing a big role                     | 2,20 | 1,25 | 166,00 |
| Market is an income generator                        | 4,51 | 0,70 | 166,00 |
| NGOs participation is important                      | 4,67 | 0,47 | 166,00 |
| Government played its roles                          | 4,45 | 0,53 | 166,00 |
| NGOs participation                                   | 2,75 | 1,47 | 166,00 |
| Capital assets are fairly distributed                | 1,86 | 0,70 | 166,00 |
| Government acted positively to the market            | 1,77 | 0,70 | 166,00 |
| NGOs are acted positively to the projects            | 1,48 | 0,52 | 166,00 |
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration              | 4,52 | 0,67 | 166,00 |
| Extent of the villagers satisfaction to the policies | 1,69 | 0,76 | 166,00 |
| Infrastructure satisfaction                          | 1,81 | 0,71 | 166,00 |

## Correlations

|                |                           | Gender | Age      | Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Extent of the villagers satisfaction to the policies | Infrastructure satisfaction |
|----------------|---------------------------|--------|----------|---|--|-----------------------------|
| Gender         | Pearson Correlation       | 1,00   | ,203**   | -,182*                                  | ,243**   | ,190*                       |
|                | Sig. (2-tailed)           |        | 0,01     | 0,02                                    | 0,00   | 0,01                        |
|                | Sum of Squares            | 41,49  | 158,39   | -10,02                                  | 15,31  | 11,19                       |
|                | Cross-products Covariance | 0,25   | 0,96     | -0,06                                   | 0,09   | 0,07                        |
|                | N                         | 166,00 | 166,00   | 166,00                                  | 166,00   | 166,00                      |
| Age            | Pearson Correlation       | ,203** | 1,00     | 0,07                                    | -0,12  | -0,15                       |
|                | Sig. (2-tailed)           | 0,01   |          | 0,35                                    | 0,12   | 0,06                        |
|                | Sum of Squares            | 158,39 | 14664,83 | 76,04                                   | -142,05  | -162,34                     |
|                | Cross-products Covariance | 0,96   | 88,88    | 0,46                                    | -0,86  | -0,98                       |
|                | N                         | 166,00 | 166,00   | 166,00                                  | 166,00   | 166,00                      |
| Marital status | Pearson Correlation       | 0,00   | ,579**   | 0,05                                    | -0,13  | 0,03                        |

|                              |                                   |          |            |        |           |           |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------------|----------|------------|--------|-----------|-----------|
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 1,00     | 0,00       | 0,56   | 0,10      | 0,66      |
|                              | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 0,00     | 451,50     | 2,50   | -8,00     | 2,00      |
|                              | Covariance                        | 0,00     | 2,74       | 0,02   | -0,05     | 0,01      |
|                              | N                                 | 166,00   | 166,00     | 166,00 | 166,00    | 166,00    |
| Job                          | Pearson Correlation               | 0,03     | ,620**     | -0,03  | -0,12     | -0,06     |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,68     | 0,00       | 0,67   | 0,11      | 0,45      |
|                              | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 3,27     | 1172,54    | -4,44  | -18,78    | -8,48     |
|                              | Covariance                        | 0,02     | 7,11       | -0,03  | -0,11     | -0,05     |
|                              | N                                 | 166,00   | 166,00     | 166,00 | 166,00    | 166,00    |
| Education level              | Pearson Correlation               | ,359**   | -,319**    | -,153* | 0,08      | ,189*     |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,00     | 0,00       | 0,05   | 0,33      | 0,01      |
|                              | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 36,67    | -613,68    | -20,80 | 11,92     | 27,41     |
|                              | Covariance                        | 0,22     | -3,72      | -0,13  | 0,07      | 0,17      |
|                              | N                                 | 166,00   | 166,00     | 166,00 | 166,00    | 166,00    |
| Family size                  | Pearson Correlation               | ,293**   | -0,09      | -0,02  | 0,15      | 0,03      |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,00     | 0,24       | 0,77   | 0,05      | 0,72      |
|                              | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 48,11    | -282,44    | -5,07  | 37,36     | 6,53      |
|                              | Covariance                        | 0,29     | -1,71      | -0,03  | 0,23      | 0,04      |
|                              | N                                 | 166,00   | 166,00     | 166,00 | 166,00    | 166,00    |
| Level of income satisfaction | Pearson Correlation               | 0,01     | -0,09      | 0,10   | 0,08      | 0,04      |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,88     | 0,22       | 0,21   | 0,28      | 0,58      |
|                              | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 0,35     | -52,86     | 3,90   | 3,83      | 1,82      |
|                              | Covariance                        | 0,00     | -0,32      | 0,02   | 0,02      | 0,01      |
|                              | N                                 | 166,00   | 166,00     | 166,00 | 166,00    | 166,00    |
| Landlord                     | Pearson Correlation               | 0,13     | ,435**     | 0,00   | -0,04     | -0,08     |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,10     | 0,00       | 0,96   | 0,60      | 0,28      |
|                              | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 21554,22 | 1360280,12 | 766,87 | -10419,28 | -19834,94 |
|                              | Covariance                        | 130,63   | 8244,12    | 4,65   | -63,15    | -120,21   |
|                              | N                                 | 166,00   | 166,00     | 166,00 | 166,00    | 166,00    |

|  |                                   |                     |                    |                     |        |                    |
|--|-----------------------------------|---------------------|--------------------|---------------------|--------|--------------------|
| Natural capital assets are important   | Pearson Correlation               | -0,02               | ,162 <sup>*</sup>  | -0,03               | 0,03   | 0,05               |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,85                | 0,04               | 0,73                | 0,68   | 0,55               |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -0,61               | 123,33             | -1,46               | 1,95   | 2,66               |
|  | Covariance                        | 0,00                | 0,75               | -0,01               | 0,01   | 0,02               |
|  | N                                 | 166,00              | 166,00             | 166,00              | 166,00 | 166,00             |
| Social capital assets are important    | Pearson Correlation               | -0,10               | -0,08              | -0,09               | 0,13   | -0,03              |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,18                | 0,32               | 0,26                | 0,10   | 0,68               |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -5,02               | -69,96             | -5,60               | 9,25   | -2,23              |
|  | Covariance                        | -0,03               | -0,42              | -0,03               | 0,06   | -0,01              |
|  | N                                 | 166,00              | 166,00             | 166,00              | 166,00 | 166,00             |
| Human capital assets are important     | Pearson Correlation               | -,177 <sup>*</sup>  | -,160 <sup>*</sup> | -0,02               | 0,04   | 0,01               |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,02                | 0,04               | 0,81                | 0,64   | 0,85               |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -7,12               | -120,79            | -0,98               | 2,27   | 0,86               |
|  | Covariance                        | -0,04               | -0,73              | -0,01               | 0,01   | 0,01               |
|  | N                                 | 166,00              | 166,00             | 166,00              | 166,00 | 166,00             |
| Physical capital assets are important  | Pearson Correlation               | -,217 <sup>**</sup> | 0,12               | ,238 <sup>**</sup>  | -0,06  | -,174 <sup>*</sup> |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,00                | 0,14               | 0,00                | 0,45   | 0,02               |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -10,17              | 102,30             | 14,83               | -4,23  | -11,60             |
|  | Covariance                        | -0,06               | 0,62               | 0,09                | -0,03  | -0,07              |
|  | N                                 | 166,00              | 166,00             | 166,00              | 166,00 | 166,00             |
| Financial capital assets are important | Pearson Correlation               | -0,03               | 0,09               | -0,04               | 0,11   | 0,06               |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,69                | 0,24               | 0,57                | 0,15   | 0,41               |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -1,20               | 66,61              | -2,32               | 6,65   | 3,55               |
|  | Covariance                        | -0,01               | 0,40               | -0,01               | 0,04   | 0,02               |
|  | N                                 | 166,00              | 166,00             | 166,00              | 166,00 | 166,00             |
| Government is playing a big role       | Pearson Correlation               | 0,04                | ,509 <sup>**</sup> | -,253 <sup>**</sup> | -0,08  | -0,10              |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,64                | 0,00               | 0,00                | 0,32   | 0,21               |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 3,80                | 991,11             | -34,82              | -12,35 | -14,45             |
|  | Covariance                        | 0,02                | 6,01               | -0,21               | -0,07  | -0,09              |
|  | N                                 |                     |                    |                     |        |                    |



|   |                                   |        |         |        |        |        |
|---|-----------------------------------|--------|---------|--------|--------|--------|
|   | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00 | 166,00 |
| Market is an income generator             | Pearson Correlation               | ,284** | ,221**  | 0,01   | 0,09   | 0,03   |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,00   | 0,00    | 0,87   | 0,23   | 0,73   |
|   | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 16,49  | 241,39  | 0,98   | 8,31   | 2,19   |
|   | Covariance                        | 0,10   | 1,46    | 0,01   | 0,05   | 0,01   |
|   | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00 | 166,00 |
| NGOs participation is important           | Pearson Correlation               | -0,06  | -0,08   | -0,02  | -0,02  | -0,08  |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,48   | 0,29    | 0,77   | 0,79   | 0,29   |
|   | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -2,17  | -60,70  | -1,17  | -1,23  | -4,60  |
|   | Covariance                        | -0,01  | -0,37   | -0,01  | -0,01  | -0,03  |
|   | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00 | 166,00 |
| Government played its roles               | Pearson Correlation               | 0,09   | 0,08    | -0,06  | 0,05   | 0,02   |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,24   | 0,33    | 0,47   | 0,51   | 0,77   |
|   | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 4,05   | 63,42   | -3,31  | 3,49   | 1,46   |
|   | Covariance                        | 0,02   | 0,38    | -0,02  | 0,02   | 0,01   |
|   | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00 | 166,00 |
| NGOs participation                        | Pearson Correlation               | ,298** | -0,14   | -0,12  | ,351** | ,375** |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,00   | 0,08    | 0,11   | 0,00   | 0,00   |
|   | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 36,25  | -313,19 | -19,99 | 64,84  | 64,90  |
|   | Covariance                        | 0,22   | -1,90   | -0,12  | 0,39   | 0,39   |
|   | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00 | 166,00 |
| Capital assets are fairly distributed     | Pearson Correlation               | -0,04  | -,168*  | -0,09  | 0,01   | -0,02  |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,60   | 0,03    | 0,25   | 0,91   | 0,82   |
|   | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -2,36  | -184,37 | -6,95  | 0,80   | -1,43  |
|   | Covariance                        | -0,01  | -1,12   | -0,04  | 0,00   | -0,01  |
|   | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00 | 166,00 |
| Government acted positively to the market | Pearson Correlation               | -0,06  | -,158*  | -0,02  | 0,01   | 0,02   |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,47   | 0,04    | 0,79   | 0,91   | 0,82   |
|   | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -3,27  | -170,54 | -1,56  | 0,78   | 1,48   |

|  |                                   |        |         |         |        |         |
|--|-----------------------------------|--------|---------|---------|--------|---------|
|  | Covariance                        | -0,02  | -1,03   | -0,01   | 0,00   | 0,01    |
|  | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00  |
| NGOs are acted positively to the projects            | Pearson Correlation               | 0,10   | 0,07    | -0,02   | -0,06  | 0,02    |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,18   | 0,35    | 0,84    | 0,44   | 0,77    |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 4,52   | 59,84   | -0,93   | -3,94  | 1,42    |
|  | Covariance                        | 0,03   | 0,36    | -0,01   | -0,02  | 0,01    |
|  | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00  |
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration              | Pearson Correlation               | -,182* | 0,07    | 1,00    | -,188* | -,500** |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,02   | 0,35    |         | 0,02   | 0,00    |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -10,02 | 76,04   | 73,40   | -15,75 | -39,23  |
|  | Covariance                        | -0,06  | 0,46    | 0,44    | -0,10  | -0,24   |
|  | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00  |
| Extent of the villagers satisfaction to the policies | Pearson Correlation               | ,243** | -0,12   | -,188*  | 1,00   | ,335**  |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,00   | 0,12    | 0,02    |        | 0,00    |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 15,31  | -142,05 | -15,75  | 95,71  | 29,98   |
|  | Covariance                        | 0,09   | -0,86   | -0,10   | 0,58   | 0,18    |
|  | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00  |
| Infrastructure satisfaction                          | Pearson Correlation               | ,190*  | -0,15   | -,500** | ,335** | 1,00    |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | 0,01   | 0,06    | 0,00    | 0,00   |         |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 11,19  | -162,34 | -39,23  | 29,98  | 83,83   |
|  | Covariance                        | 0,07   | -0,98   | -0,24   | 0,18   | 0,51    |
|  | N                                 | 166,00 | 166,00  | 166,00  | 166,00 | 166,00  |

\*\* . Correlation is significant at the 0.01 level (2-tailed).

\* . Correlation is significant at the 0.05 level (2-tailed).

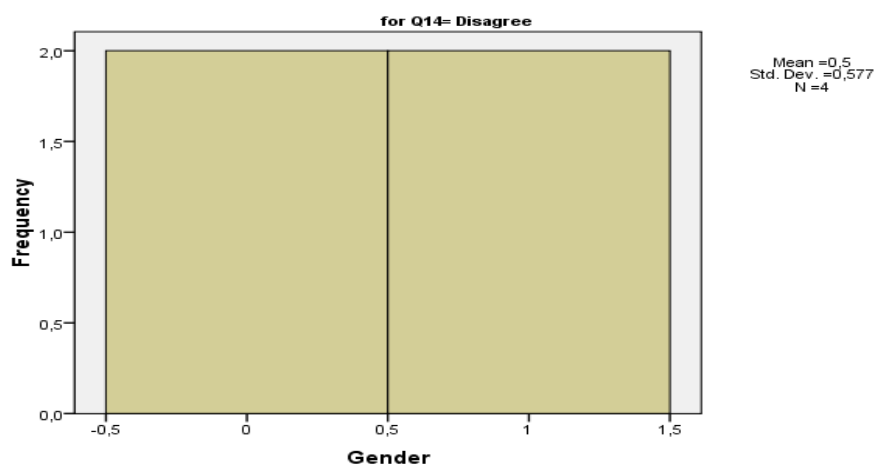
## Non-satisfactory income causes migration

### Case Processing Summary

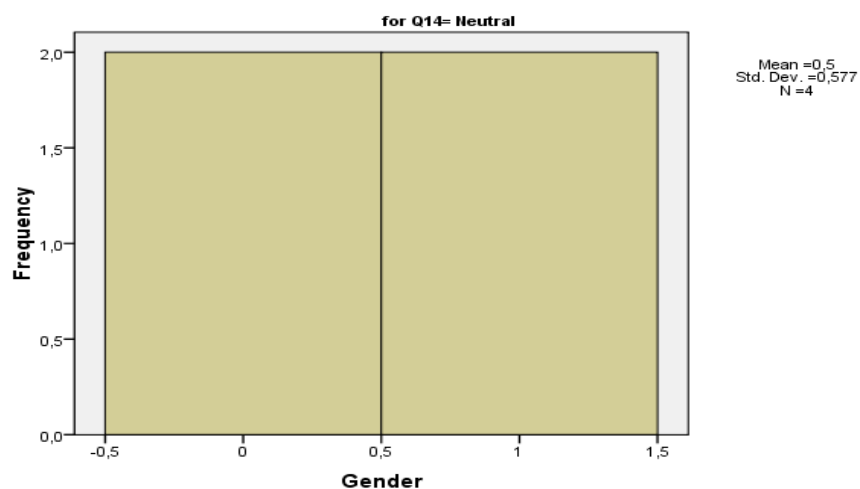
|        | Non-satisfactory income causes migration | Cases |         |         |         |       |         |
|--------|--|-------|---------|---------|---------|-------|---------|
|        |  | Valid |         | Missing |         | Total |         |
|        |  | N     | Percent | N       | Percent | N     | Percent |
| Gender | Disagree                                 | 4     | 100,0%  | 0       | ,0%     | 4     | 100,0%  |
|        | Neutral                                  | 4     | 100,0%  | 0       | ,0%     | 4     | 100,0%  |

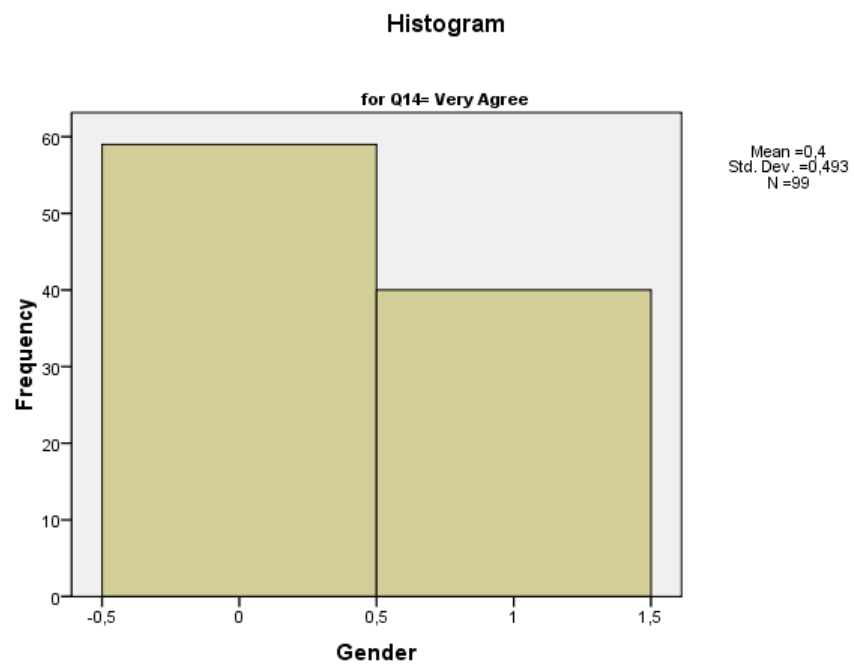
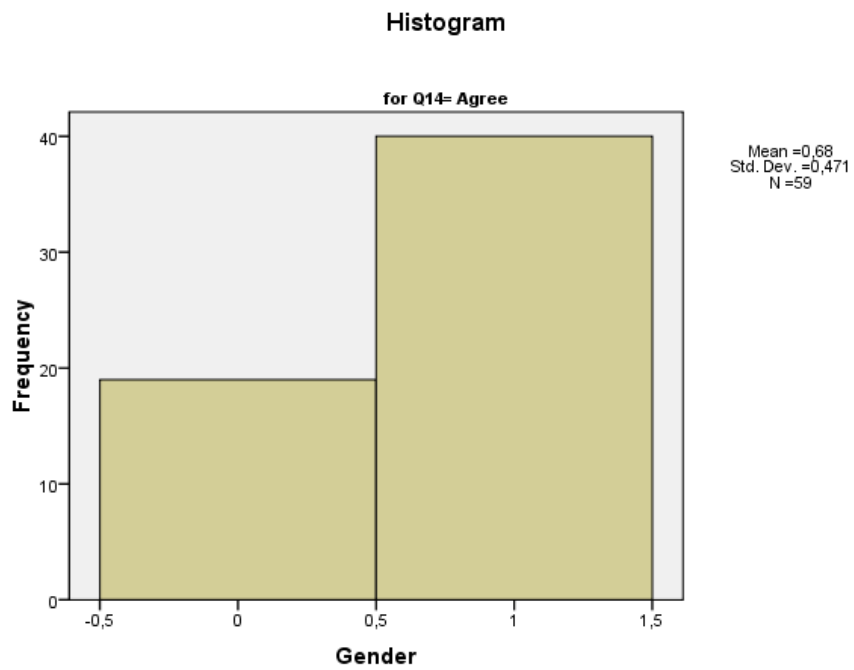
|                                       |            |    |        |   |     |    |        |
|---------------------------------------|------------|----|--------|---|-----|----|--------|
|                                       | Agree      | 59 | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 59 | 100,0% |
|                                       | Very Agree | 99 | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 99 | 100,0% |
| Education level                       | Disagree   | 4  | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 4  | 100,0% |
|                                       | Neutral    | 4  | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 4  | 100,0% |
|                                       | Agree      | 59 | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 59 | 100,0% |
|                                       | Very Agree | 99 | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 99 | 100,0% |
| Physical capital assets are important | Disagree   | 4  | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 4  | 100,0% |
|                                       | Neutral    | 4  | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 4  | 100,0% |
|                                       | Agree      | 59 | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 59 | 100,0% |
|                                       | Very Agree | 99 | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 99 | 100,0% |
| Government is playing a big role      | Disagree   | 4  | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 4  | 100,0% |
|                                       | Neutral    | 4  | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 4  | 100,0% |
|                                       | Agree      | 59 | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 59 | 100,0% |
|                                       | Very Agree | 99 | 100,0% | 0 | ,0% | 99 | 100,0% |

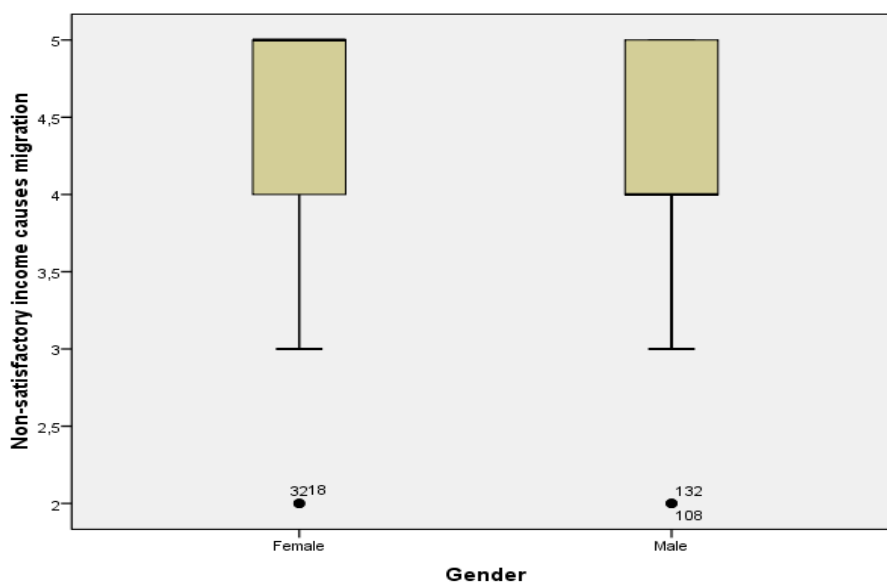
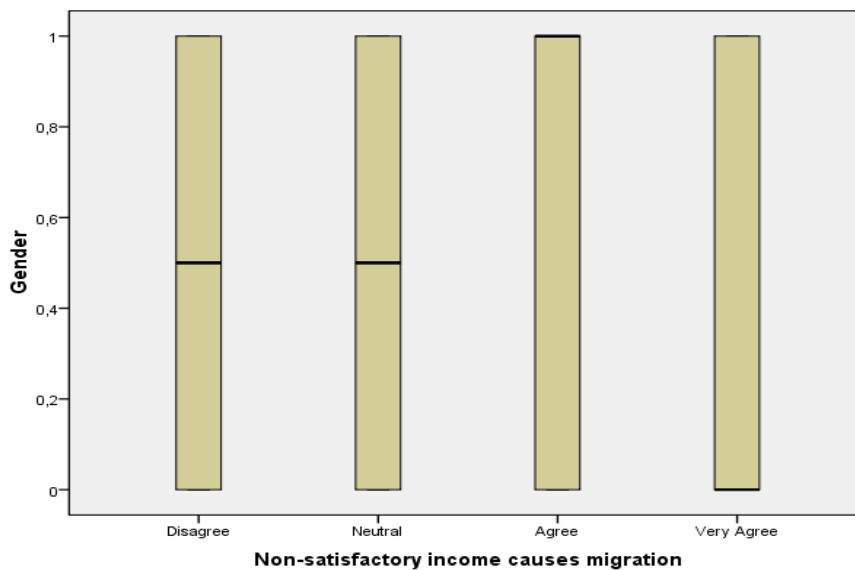
Histogram



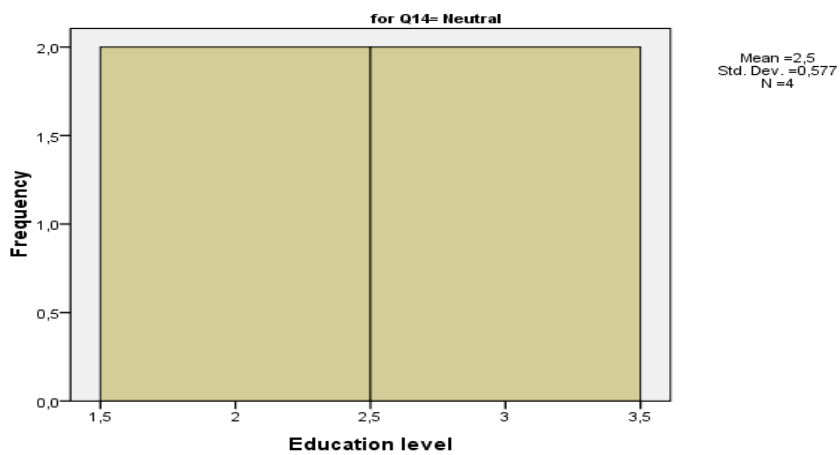
Histogram

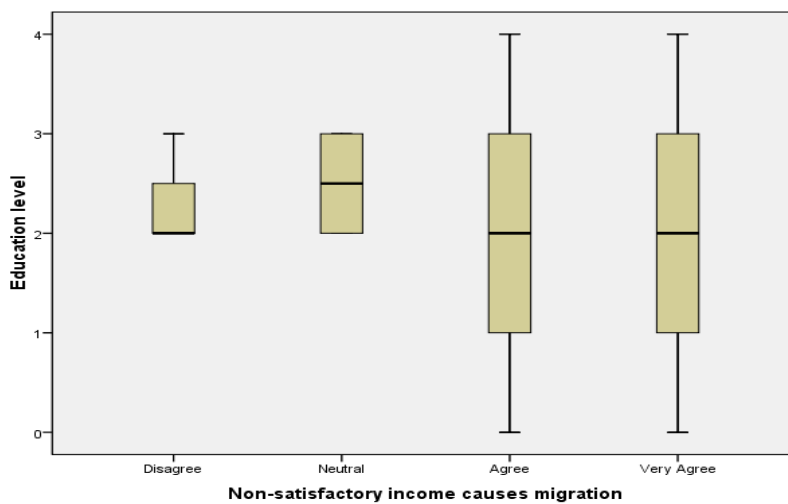
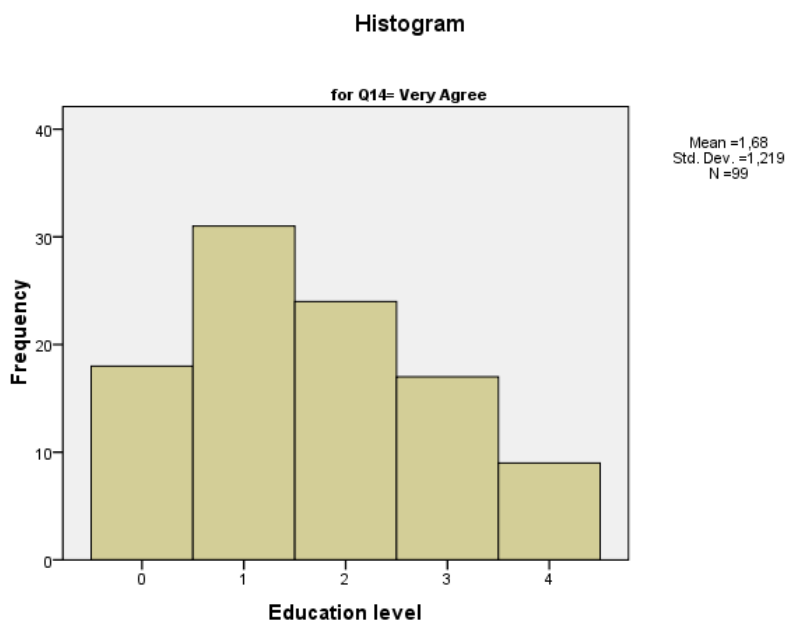
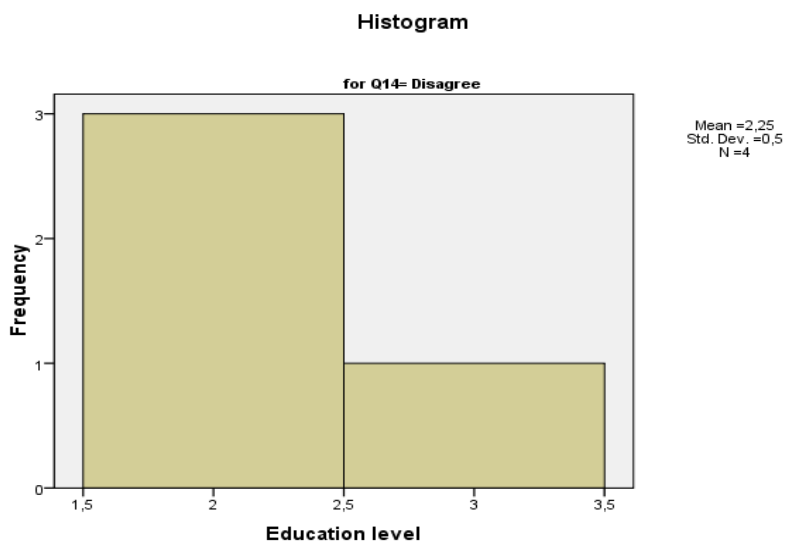


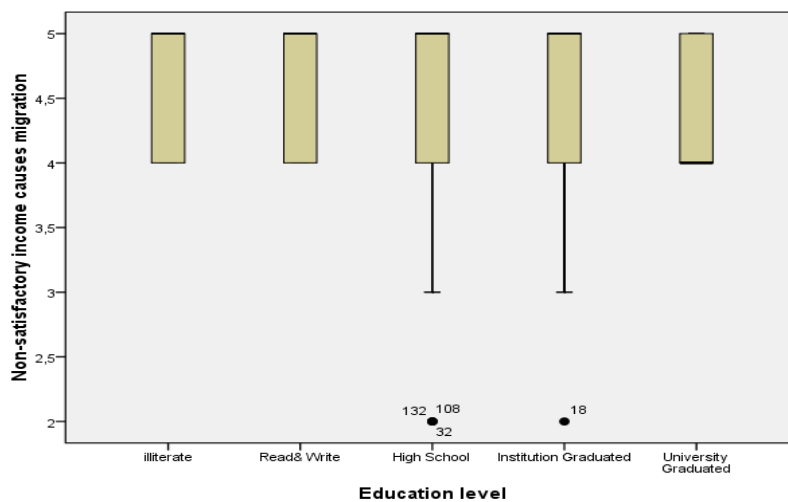




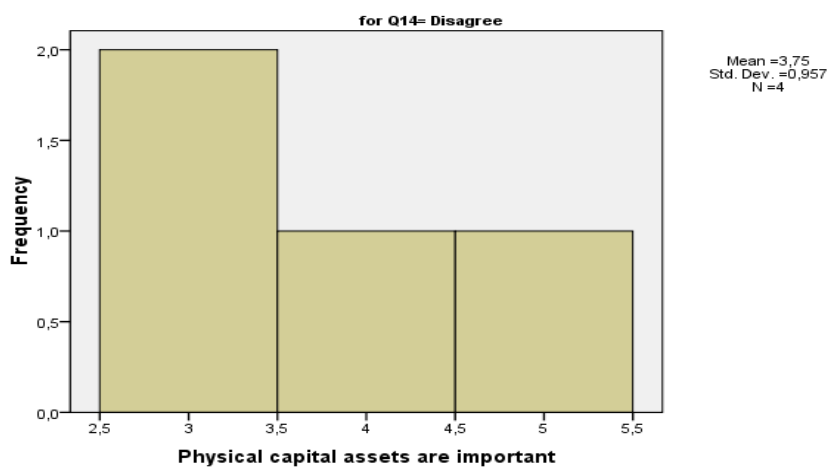
**Histogram**



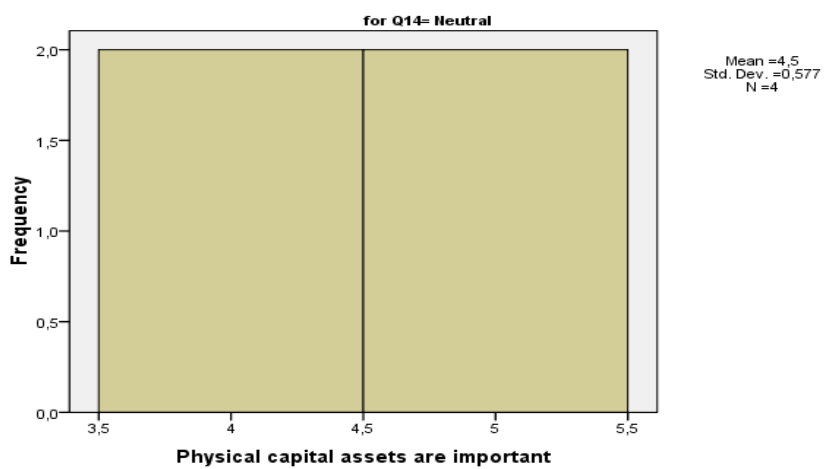


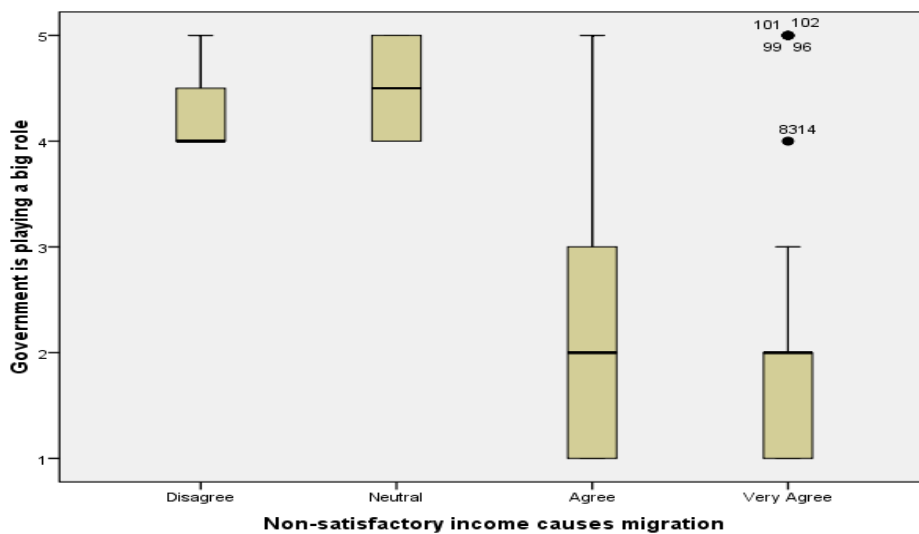
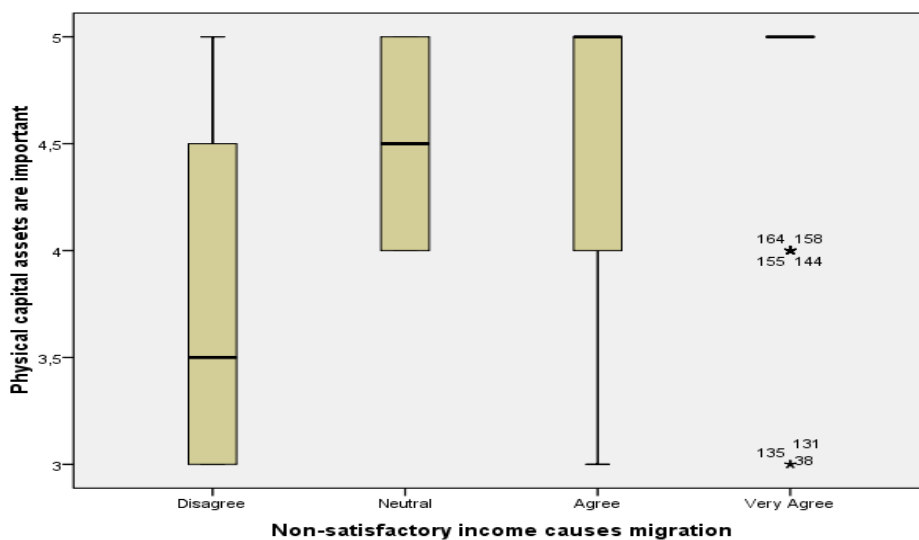
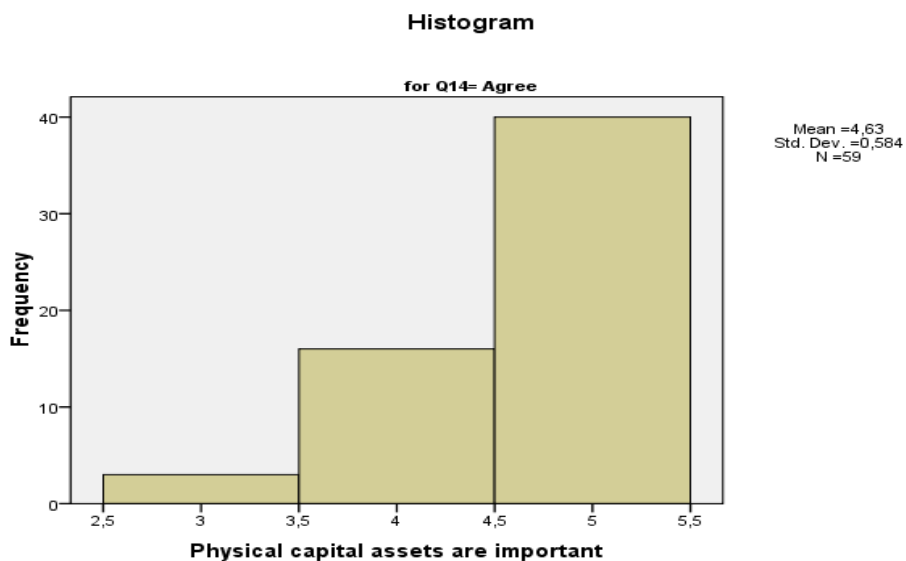


Histogram



Histogram







## Appendix-5: Migration based on satisfactory income with social segment in Mergasur

```
GET FILE='C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd
Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav'. ONEWAY Gender Age M.Status
Place_Born Job EDLevel Family_Income Family_Size Satis.Income
Level_Income_Satisfaction Land_Lord BY Q14 /MISSING ANALYSIS.
```

### Oneway

#### Notes

|                        |                                |  |
|------------------------|--------------------------------|--|
| Output Created         |                                | 26-Dez-2019 14:43:27   |
| Comments               |                                |  |
| Input                  | Data                           | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav  |
|                        | Active Dataset                 | DataSet1   |
|                        | Filter                         | <none>   |
|                        | Weight                         | <none>   |
|                        | Split File                     | <none>   |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File | 192  |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing          | User-defined missing values are treated as missing.  |
|                        | Cases Used                     | Statistics for each analysis are based on cases with no missing data for any variable in the analysis.   |
| Syntax                 |                                | ONEWAY Gender Age M.Status Place_Born Job EDLevel Family_Income Family_Size Satis.Income Level_Income_Satisfaction Land_Lord BY Q14 /MISSING ANALYSIS. |
| Resources              | Processor Time                 | 0:00:00.015  |
|                        | Elapsed Time                   | 0:00:00.025  |

```
[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd
Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav
```

#### ANOVA

|        |                | Sum of Squares | df  | Mean Square | F     | Sig. |
|--------|----------------|----------------|-----|-------------|-------|------|
| Gender | Between Groups | 2,774          | 3   | ,925        | 3,869 | ,010 |
|        | Within Groups  | 38,720         | 162 | ,239        |       |      |

|                              |                |           |     |           |       |      |
|------------------------------|----------------|-----------|-----|-----------|-------|------|
|                              | Total          | 41,494    | 165 |           |       |      |
| Age                          | Between Groups | 199,192   | 3   | 66,397    | ,744  | ,528 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 14465,634 | 162 | 89,294    |       |      |
|                              | Total          | 14664,825 | 165 |           |       |      |
| Marital status               | Between Groups | ,608      | 3   | ,203      | ,804  | ,494 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 40,892    | 162 | ,252      |       |      |
|                              | Total          | 41,500    | 165 |           |       |      |
| Place of born                | Between Groups | 6,415     | 3   | 2,138     | 1,989 | ,118 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 174,121   | 162 | 1,075     |       |      |
|                              | Total          | 180,536   | 165 |           |       |      |
| Job                          | Between Groups | 2,389     | 3   | ,796      | ,534  | ,659 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 241,448   | 162 | 1,490     |       |      |
|                              | Total          | 243,837   | 165 |           |       |      |
| Education level              | Between Groups | 6,527     | 3   | 2,176     | 1,436 | ,234 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 245,407   | 162 | 1,515     |       |      |
|                              | Total          | 251,934   | 165 |           |       |      |
| Family income                | Between Groups | 1,974E+12 | 3   | 6,581E+11 | 3,153 | ,027 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 3,382E+13 | 162 | 2,088E+11 |       |      |
|                              | Total          | 3,579E+13 | 165 |           |       |      |
| Family size                  | Between Groups | 5,086     | 3   | 1,695     | ,425  | ,735 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 646,462   | 162 | 3,991     |       |      |
|                              | Total          | 651,548   | 165 |           |       |      |
| Satisfactory income          | Between Groups | 6,217E+11 | 3   | 2,072E+11 | ,820  | ,484 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 4,093E+13 | 162 | 2,526E+11 |       |      |
|                              | Total          | 4,155E+13 | 165 |           |       |      |
| Level of income satisfaction | Between Groups | ,239      | 3   | ,080      | ,614  | ,607 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 20,996    | 162 | ,130      |       |      |
|                              | Total          | 21,235    | 165 |           |       |      |
| Landlord                     | Between Groups | 1,025E+07 | 3   | 3,415E+06 | ,843  | ,472 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 6,567E+08 | 162 | 4,053E+06 |       |      |
|                              | Total          | 6,669E+08 | 165 |           |       |      |

## Appendix-6: Test of the hypotheses in Mergasur

### 1- First hypothesis

```
CORRELATIONS /VARIABLES=Q14 Q18 /PRINT=TWOTAIL NOSIG /STATISTICS
DESCRIPTIVES XPROD /MISSING=PAIRWISE.
```

### Correlations

## Notes

|                        |   |   |
|------------------------|---|---|
| Output Created         | 20-Mrz-2019 13:36:11  |   |
| Comments               |   |   |
| Input                  | Data  | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur\Main-MERG 166.sav |
|                        | Active Dataset  | DataSet1  |
|                        | Filter  | <none>  |
|                        | Weight  | <none>  |
|                        | Split File  | <none>  |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File  | 192   |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing   | User-defined missing values are treated as missing.   |
|                        | Cases Used  | Statistics for each pair of variables are based on all the cases with valid data for that pair.               |
| Syntax                 | CORRELATIONS<br>/VARIABLES=Q14 Q18<br>/PRINT=TWOTAIL NOSIG<br>/STATISTICS DESCRIPTIVES<br>XPROD<br>/MISSING=PAIRWISE. |   |
| Resources              | Processor Time  | 0:00:00.000   |
|                        | Elapsed Time  | 0:00:00.008   |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur\Main-MERG 166.sav

## Descriptive Statistics

|   | Mean | Std. Deviation | N   |
|---|------|----------------|-----|
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration | 4,52 | ,667           | 166 |
| Infrastructure satisfaction             | 1,52 | ,711           | 166 |

## Correlations

|   |                                   | Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Infrastructure satisfaction |
|---|-----------------------------------|---|-----------------------------|
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Pearson Correlation               | 1                                       | -,474**                     |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)                   |   | ,000                        |
|   | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 73,404                                  | -37,072                     |
|   | Covariance                        | ,445                                    | -,225                       |
|   | N                                 | 166                                     | 166                         |
| Infrastructure satisfaction             | Pearson Correlation               | -,474**                                 | 1                           |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | ,000                                    |                             |
|   | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -37,072                                 | 83,446                      |

|            |       |      |
|------------|-------|------|
| Covariance | -,225 | ,506 |
| N          | 166   | 166  |

\*\* . Correlation is significant at the 0.01 level (2-tailed).

T-TEST PAIRS=Q14 WITH Q18 (PAIRED) /CRITERIA=CI(.9500)  
/MISSING=ANALYSIS.

## T-Test

### Notes

|                        |   |  |
|------------------------|---|--|
| Output Created         | 20-Mrz-2019 13:37:18  |  |
| Comments               |   |  |
| Input                  | Data  | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav              |
|                        | Active Dataset  | DataSet1   |
|                        | Filter  | <none>   |
|                        | Weight  | <none>   |
|                        | Split File  | <none>   |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File  | 192  |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing   | User defined missing values are treated as missing.  |
|                        | Cases Used  | Statistics for each analysis are based on the cases with no missing or out-of-range data for any variable in the analysis. |
| Syntax                 | T-TEST PAIRS=Q14 WITH Q18 (PAIRED)<br>/CRITERIA=CI(.9500)<br>/MISSING=ANALYSIS. |  |
| Resources              | Processor Time  | 0:00:00.000  |
|                        | Elapsed Time  | 0:00:00.005  |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav

### Paired Samples Statistics

|        |   | Mean | N   | Std. Deviation | Std. Error Mean |
|--------|---|------|-----|----------------|-----------------|
| Pair 1 | Non-satisfactory income cause migration | 4,52 | 166 | ,667           | ,052            |
|        | Infrastructure                          | 1,52 | 166 | ,711           | ,055            |

|              |  |  |  |  |
|--------------|--|--|--|--|
| satisfaction |  |  |  |  |
|--------------|--|--|--|--|

### Paired Samples Correlations

|        |   | N   | Correlation | Sig. |
|--------|---|-----|-------------|------|
| Pair 1 | Non-satisfactory income cause migration & Infrastructure satisfaction | 166 | -,474       | ,000 |

### Paired Samples Test

|        |   | Paired Differences |                |                 |   |       | t      | df  | Sig. (2-tailed) |
|--------|---|--------------------|----------------|-----------------|---|-------|--------|-----|-----------------|
|        |   | Mean               | Std. Deviation | Std. Error Mean | 95% Confidence Interval of the Difference |       |        |     |                 |
|        |   |                    |                |                 | Lower                                     | Upper |        |     |                 |
| Pair 1 | Non-satisfactory income cause migration - Infrastructure satisfaction | 3,006              | 1,183          | ,092            | 2,825                                     | 3,187 | 32,733 | 165 | ,000            |

## 2- Second hypothesis

```
CORRELATIONS /VARIABLES=Q14 Q18 Q17 /PRINT=TWOTAIL NOSIG /STATISTICS
DESCRIPTIVES XPROD /MISSING=PAIRWISE.
```

### Correlations

#### Notes

|                        |                                |   |
|------------------------|--------------------------------|---|
| Output Created         |                                | 20-Mrz-2019 13:59:22  |
| Comments               |                                |   |
| Input                  | Data                           | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav |
|                        | Active Dataset                 | DataSet1  |
|                        | Filter                         | <none>  |
|                        | Weight                         | <none>  |
|                        | Split File                     | <none>  |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File | 192   |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing          | User-defined missing values are treated as missing.   |
|                        | Cases Used                     | Statistics for each pair of variables are based on all the cases with valid data for that pair.               |

|           |   |  |             |
|-----------|---|--|-------------|
| Syntax    | CORRELATIONS<br>/VARIABLES=Q14 Q18 Q17<br>/PRINT=TWOTAIL NOSIG<br>/STATISTICS DESCRIPTIVES<br>XPROD<br>/MISSING=PAIRWISE. |  |             |
| Resources | Processor Time  |  | 0:00:00.016 |
|           | Elapsed Time  |  | 0:00:00.013 |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav

#### Descriptive Statistics

|  | Mean | Std. Deviation | N   |
|--|------|----------------|-----|
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration              | 4,52 | ,667           | 166 |
| Infrastructure satisfaction                          | 1,52 | ,711           | 166 |
| Extent of the villagers satisfaction to the policies | 1,53 | ,768           | 166 |

#### Correlations

|  |                                   | Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Infrastructure satisfaction | Extent of the villagers satisfaction to the policies |
|--|-----------------------------------|---|-----------------------------|--|
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration              | Pearson Correlation               | 1                                       | -,474**                     | -,569**  |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   |   | ,000                        | ,000   |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | 73,404                                  | -37,072                     | -48,120  |
|  | Covariance                        | ,445                                    | -,225                       | -,292  |
|  | N                                 | 166                                     | 166                         | 166  |
| Infrastructure satisfaction                          | Pearson Correlation               | -,474**                                 | 1                           | ,459**   |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | ,000                                    |                             | ,000   |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -37,072                                 | 83,446                      | 41,410   |
|  | Covariance                        | -,225                                   | ,506                        | ,251   |
|  | N                                 | 166                                     | 166                         | 166  |
| Extent of the villagers satisfaction to the policies | Pearson Correlation               | -,569**                                 | ,459**                      | 1  |
|  | Sig. (2-tailed)                   | ,000                                    | ,000                        |  |
|  | Sum of Squares and Cross-products | -48,120                                 | 41,410                      | 97,349   |
|  | Covariance                        | -,292                                   | ,251                        | ,590   |
|  | N                                 | 166                                     | 166                         | 166  |

\*\* . Correlation is significant at the 0.01 level (2-tailed).

ONEWAY Q14 Q18 BY Q17 /MISSING ANALYSIS.

## Oneway

### Notes

|                        |  |   |
|------------------------|--|---|
| Output Created         | 20.04.2019 14:00:32                      |   |
| Comments               |  |   |
| Input                  | Data                                     | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav |
|                        | Active Dataset                           | DataSet1  |
|                        | Filter                                   | <none>  |
|                        | Weight                                   | <none>  |
|                        | Split File                               | <none>  |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File           | 192   |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing                    | User-defined missing values are treated as missing.   |
|                        | Cases Used                               | Statistics for each analysis are based on cases with no missing data for any variable in the analysis.        |
| Syntax                 | ONEWAY Q14 Q18 BY Q17 /MISSING ANALYSIS. |   |
| Resources              | Processor Time                           | 0:00:00.000   |
|                        | Elapsed Time                             | 0:00:00.012   |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Mergasur>Main-MERG 166.sav

### ANOVA

|   |                | Sum of Squares | Df  | Mean Square | F      | Sig. |
|---|----------------|----------------|-----|-------------|--------|------|
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Between Groups | 32,012         | 4   | 8,003       | 31,129 | ,000 |
|   | Within Groups  | 41,392         | 161 | ,257        |        |      |
|   | Total          | 73,404         | 165 |             |        |      |
| Infrastructure satisfaction             | Between Groups | 38,387         | 4   | 9,597       | 34,291 | ,000 |
|   | Within Groups  | 45,058         | 161 | ,280        |        |      |
|   | Total          | 83,446         | 165 |             |        |      |

## Appendix-7: Income impacts migration in Bahrka

EXAMINE VARIABLES=Q14 /PLOT BOXPLOT HISTOGRAM /COMPARE GROUP /STATISTICS DESCRIPTIVES /CINTERVAL 95 /MISSING LISTWISE /NOTOTAL.

### Explore

### Notes

|                        |   |   |
|------------------------|---|---|
| Output Created         | 22.04.2019 09:49:47   |   |
| Comments               |   |   |
| Input                  | Data  | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav |
|                        | Active Dataset  | DataSet1  |
|                        | Filter  | <none>  |
|                        | Weight  | <none>  |
|                        | Split File  | <none>  |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File  | 192   |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing   | User-defined missing values for dependent variables are treated as missing.                                   |
|                        | Cases Used  | Statistics are based on cases with no missing values for any dependent variable or factor used.               |
| Syntax                 | EXAMINE VARIABLES=Q14<br>/PLOT BOXPLOT HISTOGRAM<br>/COMPARE GROUP<br>/STATISTICS DESCRIPTIVES<br>/CINTERVAL 95<br>/MISSING LISTWISE<br>/NOTOTAL. |   |
| Resources              | Processor Time  | 0:00:00.406   |
|                        | Elapsed Time  | 0:00:00.406   |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav

#### Case Processing Summary

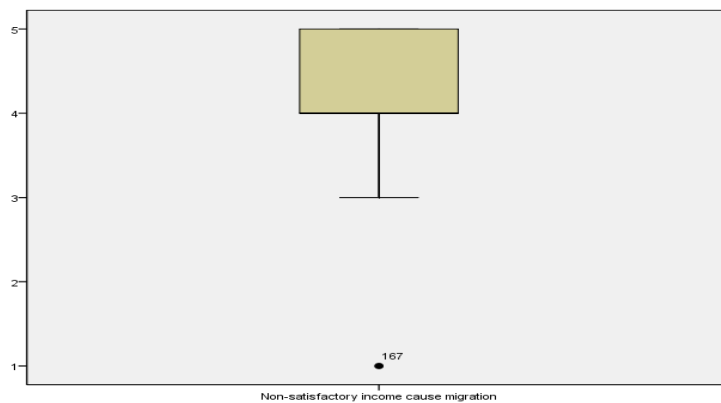
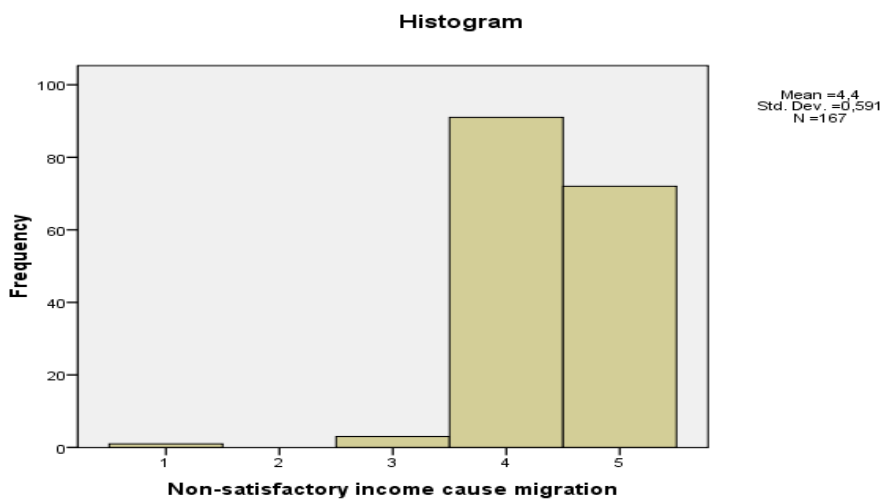
|   | Cases |         |         |         |       |         |
|---|-------|---------|---------|---------|-------|---------|
|   | Valid |         | Missing |         | Total |         |
|   | N     | Percent | N       | Percent | N     | Percent |
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration | 167   | 87,0%   | 25      | 13,0%   | 192   | 100,0%  |

#### Descriptives

|   |                                  |             | Statistic | Std. Error |
|---|----------------------------------|-------------|-----------|------------|
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Mean                             |             | 4,40      | ,046       |
|   | 95% Confidence Interval for Mean | Lower Bound | 4,30      |            |
|   |                                  | Upper Bound | 4,49      |            |
|   | 5% Trimmed Mean                  |             | 4,42      |            |
|   | Median                           |             | 4,00      |            |
|   | Variance                         |             | ,349      |            |
|   | Std. Deviation                   |             | ,591      |            |
|   | Minimum                          |             | 1         |            |
|   | Maximum                          |             | 5         |            |
|   | Range                            |             | 4         |            |
|   | Interquartile Range              |             | 1         |            |
|   | Skewness                         |             | -1,094    | ,188       |
|   | Kurtosis                         |             | 4,955     | ,374       |



### Non-satisfactory income causes migration



### Appendix-8: Extent of the income in Bahrka

| Form No | Satisfied |     |         |      |
|---------|-----------|-----|---------|------|
| 2       | 185714    | 153 | Average | 291  |
| 3       | 171429    | 142 | Max     | 2499 |
| 4       | 200000    | 165 | Mini    | 142  |
| 5       | 270000    | 223 |         |      |

| Form No | Not Satisfied |     |         |     |
|---------|---------------|-----|---------|-----|
| 1       | 57143         | 47  | Average | 111 |
| 7       | 150000        | 124 | Max     | 140 |
| 9       | 160000        | 132 | Mini    | 21  |
| 11      | 142857,1      | 118 |         |     |

|    |          |     |
|----|----------|-----|
| 6  | 200000   | 165 |
| 8  | 190000   | 157 |
| 10 | 333333   | 275 |
| 14 | 400000   | 331 |
| 15 | 191667   | 158 |
| 17 | 240000   | 198 |
| 19 | 360000   | 298 |
| 20 | 233333   | 193 |
| 22 | 1114286  | 921 |
| 23 | 200000   | 165 |
| 24 | 280000   | 231 |
| 25 | 270000   | 223 |
| 26 | 225000   | 186 |
| 27 | 250000   | 207 |
| 28 | 180000   | 149 |
| 29 | 266667   | 220 |
| 31 | 400000   | 331 |
| 34 | 200000   | 165 |
| 42 | 216667   | 179 |
| 43 | 300000   | 248 |
| 45 | 200000   | 165 |
| 50 | 200000   | 165 |
| 52 | 183333   | 152 |
| 55 | 200000   | 165 |
| 56 | 193200   | 160 |
| 57 | 286667   | 237 |
| 58 | 345000   | 285 |
| 59 | 433333,3 | 358 |
| 60 | 300000   | 248 |
| 61 | 240000   | 198 |
| 62 | 300000   | 248 |
| 63 | 500000   | 413 |
| 65 | 1000000  | 826 |
| 66 | 283333,3 | 234 |
| 67 | 333333,3 | 275 |
| 68 | 400000   | 331 |
| 69 | 300000   | 248 |
| 70 | 340000   | 281 |
| 71 | 750000   | 620 |
| 72 | 300000   | 248 |
| 73 | 283333,3 | 234 |
| 74 | 250000   | 207 |
| 75 | 200000   | 165 |
| 76 | 260000   | 215 |
| 77 | 425000   | 351 |
| 78 | 400000   | 331 |

|     |          |     |
|-----|----------|-----|
| 12  | 137142,9 | 113 |
| 13  | 128571,4 | 106 |
| 16  | 166666,7 | 138 |
| 18  | 150000   | 124 |
| 21  | 158333,3 | 131 |
| 30  | 80000    | 66  |
| 32  | 111666,7 | 92  |
| 33  | 114285,7 | 94  |
| 35  | 135714,3 | 112 |
| 36  | 150000   | 124 |
| 37  | 166666,7 | 138 |
| 38  | 60000    | 50  |
| 39  | 50000    | 41  |
| 40  | 133333   | 110 |
| 41  | 66666,67 | 55  |
| 44  | 27500    | 23  |
| 46  | 166666,7 | 138 |
| 47  | 154000   | 127 |
| 48  | 116666,7 | 96  |
| 49  | 170000   | 140 |
| 51  | 143333,3 | 118 |
| 53  | 166667   | 138 |
| 54  | 170000   | 140 |
| 64  | 125000   | 103 |
| 79  | 161000   | 133 |
| 89  | 128571,4 | 106 |
| 90  | 170000   | 140 |
| 95  | 166666,7 | 138 |
| 97  | 145000   | 120 |
| 98  | 150000   | 124 |
| 108 | 160000   | 132 |
| 111 | 134000   | 111 |
| 112 | 108333,3 | 90  |
| 116 | 146666,7 | 121 |
| 127 | 135714,3 | 112 |
| 128 | 158333,3 | 131 |
| 133 | 142857,1 | 118 |
| 134 | 60000    | 50  |
| 139 | 141666,7 | 117 |
| 140 | 110000   | 91  |
| 141 | 162500   | 134 |
| 142 | 141666,7 | 117 |
| 144 | 166666,7 | 138 |
| 145 | 140000   | 116 |
| 150 | 142857,1 | 118 |
| 151 | 136000   | 112 |

|     |          |      |
|-----|----------|------|
| 80  | 237500   | 196  |
| 81  | 275000   | 227  |
| 82  | 650000   | 537  |
| 83  | 500000   | 413  |
| 84  | 290000   | 240  |
| 85  | 260000   | 215  |
| 86  | 600000   | 496  |
| 87  | 216666,7 | 179  |
| 88  | 400000   | 331  |
| 91  | 400000   | 331  |
| 92  | 180000   | 149  |
| 93  | 200000   | 165  |
| 94  | 180000   | 149  |
| 96  | 200000   | 165  |
| 99  | 191428,6 | 158  |
| 100 | 333333,3 | 275  |
| 101 | 316666,7 | 262  |
| 102 | 280000   | 231  |
| 103 | 333333,3 | 275  |
| 104 | 400000   | 331  |
| 105 | 2333333  | 1928 |
| 106 | 215000   | 178  |
| 107 | 250000   | 207  |
| 109 | 3023333  | 2499 |
| 110 | 425000   | 351  |
| 113 | 250000   | 207  |
| 114 | 172000   | 142  |
| 115 | 275000   | 227  |
| 117 | 333333,3 | 275  |
| 118 | 535000   | 442  |
| 119 | 375000   | 310  |
| 120 | 850000   | 702  |
| 121 | 425000   | 351  |
| 122 | 200000   | 165  |
| 123 | 320000   | 264  |
| 124 | 380000   | 314  |
| 125 | 290000   | 240  |
| 126 | 500000   | 413  |
| 129 | 221428,6 | 183  |
| 130 | 260000   | 215  |
| 131 | 180000   | 149  |
| 132 | 400000   | 331  |
| 135 | 320000   | 264  |
| 136 | 250000   | 207  |
| 137 | 210000   | 174  |
| 138 | 180000   | 149  |

|     |          |     |
|-----|----------|-----|
| 156 | 150000   | 124 |
| 158 | 141666,7 | 117 |
| 159 | 106666,7 | 88  |
| 164 | 166666,7 | 138 |
| 165 | 166666,7 | 138 |

|     |          |     |
|-----|----------|-----|
| 143 | 216666,7 | 179 |
| 146 | 285714,3 | 236 |
| 147 | 180000   | 149 |
| 148 | 200000   | 165 |
| 149 | 400000   | 331 |
| 152 | 180000   | 149 |
| 153 | 250000   | 207 |
| 154 | 260000   | 215 |
| 155 | 200000   | 165 |
| 157 | 200000   | 165 |
| 160 | 216666,7 | 179 |
| 161 | 180000   | 149 |
| 162 | 333333,3 | 275 |
| 163 | 425000   | 351 |
| 166 | 180000   | 149 |

## Appendix-9: Factors impact on satisfactory income in Bahrka

```

CORRELATIONS          /VARIABLES=Gender  Age  M.Status  Job  EDLevel  Family_Size
Level_Income_Satisfaction Land_Lord Q1 Q2 Q3 Q4 Q5 Q6 Q7 Q8 Q9 Q10 Q11 Q12
Q13 Q14 Q17 Q18      /PRINT=TWOTAIL NOSIG      /MISSING=PAIRWISE.

```

### Correlations

#### Notes

|                |                                |
|----------------|--------------------------------|
| Output Created |                                |
| Comments       |                                |
| Input          | Data                           |
|                |                                |
|                | Active Dataset                 |
|                | Filter                         |
|                | Weight                         |
|                | Split File                     |
|                | N of Rows in Working Data File |

|                        |                                  |
|------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing Cases Used |
| Syntax                 |                                  |
| Resources              | Processor Time Elapsed Time      |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav

### Correlations

|                              |                     | Non-satisfactor y income cause migration | Extent of the villagers satisfactio n to the policies | Infrastruct ure satisfactio n |
|------------------------------|---------------------|--|---|-------------------------------|
| Gender                       | Pearson Correlation | -,073                                    | ,053  | -,003                         |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,348                                     | ,499  | ,966                          |
|                              | N                   | 167                                      | 166   | 166                           |
| Age                          | Pearson Correlation | ,111                                     | ,095  | ,117                          |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,155                                     | ,222  | ,134                          |
|                              | N                   | 167                                      | 166   | 166                           |
| Marital status               | Pearson Correlation | ,080                                     | -,099   | -,012                         |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,307                                     | ,203  | ,873                          |
|                              | N                   | 166                                      | 166   | 166                           |
| Job                          | Pearson Correlation | ,014                                     | -,040   | ,043                          |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,857                                     | ,606  | ,584                          |
|                              | N                   | 167                                      | 166   | 166                           |
| Education level              | Pearson Correlation | -,021                                    | ,010  | ,027                          |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,789                                     | ,897  | ,734                          |
|                              | N                   | 167                                      | 166   | 166                           |
| Family size                  | Pearson Correlation | -,447**                                  | ,014  | ,023                          |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,000                                     | ,854  | ,764                          |
|                              | N                   | 167                                      | 166   | 166                           |
| Level of income satisfaction | Pearson Correlation | -,447**                                  | ,115  | ,006                          |
|                              | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,000                                     | ,141  | ,943                          |
|                              | N                   | 167                                      | 166   | 166                           |
| Landlord                     | Pearson Correlation | -,034                                    | ,028  | -,004                         |

|   |                     |         |       |         |
|---|---------------------|---------|-------|---------|
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,659    | ,725  | ,962    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Natural capital assets are important      | Pearson Correlation | ,344**  | -,068 | -,201** |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,000    | ,385  | ,009    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Social capital assets are important       | Pearson Correlation | -,123   | -,009 | -,005   |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,113    | ,907  | ,944    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Human capital assets are important        | Pearson Correlation | -,015   | ,032  | -,013   |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,850    | ,678  | ,865    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Physical capital assets are important     | Pearson Correlation | ,046    | -,030 | -,191*  |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,556    | ,696  | ,013    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Financial capital assets are important    | Pearson Correlation | -,126   | ,049  | ,151    |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,104    | ,530  | ,051    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Government is playing big role            | Pearson Correlation | -,255** | -,065 | ,076    |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,001    | ,408  | ,330    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Market is an income generator             | Pearson Correlation | ,015    | -,077 | ,049    |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,846    | ,322  | ,531    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| NGOs participation is important           | Pearson Correlation | -,085   | ,008  | ,014    |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,276    | ,915  | ,856    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Government played its roles               | Pearson Correlation | ,076    | -,071 | ,070    |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,328    | ,363  | ,368    |
|   | N                   | 166     | 166   | 166     |
| NGOs participation                        | Pearson Correlation | -,088   | -,018 | ,035    |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,258    | ,817  | ,658    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Capital assets are fairly distributed     | Pearson Correlation | -,179*  | -,060 | ,125    |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,021    | ,443  | ,108    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Government acted positively to the market | Pearson Correlation | -,041   | ,033  | ,125    |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,603    | ,674  | ,107    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| NGOs are acted positively to the projects | Pearson Correlation | -,026   | -,017 | ,110    |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,737    | ,832  | ,158    |
|   | N                   | 167     | 166   | 166     |
| Non-satisfactory income cause             | Pearson Correlation | 1       | -,043 | ,008    |

|   |                        |       |      |      |
|---|------------------------|-------|------|------|
| migration   | Sig. (2-tailed)        |       | ,584 | ,914 |
|   | N                      | 167   | 166  | 166  |
| Extent of the<br>villagers<br>satisfaction to the<br>policies | Pearson<br>Correlation | -,043 | 1    | ,074 |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)        | ,584  |      | ,345 |
|   | N                      | 166   | 166  | 166  |
| Infrastructure<br>satisfaction                                | Pearson<br>Correlation | ,008  | ,074 | 1    |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)        | ,914  | ,345 |      |
|   | N                      | 166   | 166  | 166  |

\*\* . Correlation is significant at the 0.01 level (2-tailed).

\* . Correlation is significant at the 0.05 level (2-tailed).

## Appendix-10: Migration based satisfactory income with social segments Bahrka

ONEWAY Gender Age M.Status Place\_Born Job EDLevel Family\_income Family\_Size Satis.Income Level\_Income\_Satisfaction Land\_Lord BY Q14 /MISSING ANALYSIS.

### Oneway

#### Notes

|                |                |   |
|----------------|----------------|---|
| Output Created |                | 26-Dez-2019 14:09:28  |
| Comments       |                |   |
| Input          | Data           | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav |
|                | Active Dataset | DataSet1  |
|                | Filter         | <none>  |

|                        |                                |  |
|------------------------|--------------------------------|--|
|                        | Weight                         | <none>   |
|                        | Split File                     | <none>   |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File | 192  |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing          | User-defined missing values are treated as missing.  |
|                        | Cases Used                     | Statistics for each analysis are based on cases with no missing data for any variable in the analysis.<br>ONEWAY Gender Age M.Status Place_Born Job EDLevel Family_income Family_Size Satis.Income Level_Income_Satisfaction Land_Lord BY Q14 /MISSING ANALYSIS. |
| Syntax                 |                                |  |
| Resources              | Processor Time                 | 0:00:00.015  |
|                        | Elapsed Time                   | 0:00:00.052  |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav

## ANOVA

|                 |                | Sum of Squares | df  | Mean Square | F     | Sig. |
|-----------------|----------------|----------------|-----|-------------|-------|------|
| Gender          | Between Groups | ,358           | 3   | ,119        | ,471  | ,703 |
|                 | Within Groups  | 41,378         | 163 | ,254        |       |      |
|                 | Total          | 41,737         | 166 |             |       |      |
| Age             | Between Groups | 405,781        | 3   | 135,260     | 1,146 | ,332 |
|                 | Within Groups  | 19240,531      | 163 | 118,040     |       |      |
|                 | Total          | 19646,311      | 166 |             |       |      |
| Marital status  | Between Groups | ,277           | 2   | ,139        | ,548  | ,579 |
|                 | Within Groups  | 41,223         | 163 | ,253        |       |      |
|                 | Total          | 41,500         | 165 |             |       |      |
| Place of born   | Between Groups | ,408           | 3   | ,136        | ,167  | ,918 |
|                 | Within Groups  | 132,574        | 163 | ,813        |       |      |
|                 | Total          | 132,982        | 166 |             |       |      |
| Job             | Between Groups | 1,178          | 3   | ,393        | ,599  | ,617 |
|                 | Within Groups  | 106,882        | 163 | ,656        |       |      |
|                 | Total          | 108,060        | 166 |             |       |      |
| Education level | Between Groups | 6,855          | 3   | 2,285       | 1,567 | ,199 |
|                 | Within Groups  | 237,696        | 163 | 1,458       |       |      |
|                 | Total          | 244,551        | 166 |             |       |      |
| Family income   | Between Groups | 1,860E+13      | 3   | 6,199E+12   | 6,645 | ,000 |
|                 | Within Groups  | 1,521E+14      | 163 | 9,330E+11   |       |      |
|                 | Total          | 1,707E+14      | 166 |             |       |      |



|                              |                |           |     |               |           |      |
|------------------------------|----------------|-----------|-----|---------------|-----------|------|
| Family size                  | Between Groups | 8,051E+11 | 3   | 2,684<br>E+11 | 1,472E+11 | ,000 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 297,212   | 163 | 1,823         |           |      |
|                              | Total          | 8,051E+11 | 166 |               |           |      |
| Satisfactory income          | Between Groups | 2,366E+12 | 3   | 7,888<br>E+11 | 4,055     | ,008 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 3,171E+13 | 163 | 1,945<br>E+11 |           |      |
|                              | Total          | 3,407E+13 | 166 |               |           |      |
| Level of income satisfaction | Between Groups | 1,680E+12 | 3   | 5,600<br>E+11 | 2,508E+12 | ,000 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 36,400    | 163 | ,223          |           |      |
|                              | Total          | 1,680E+12 | 166 |               |           |      |
| Landlord                     | Between Groups | 1,198E+07 | 3   | 3,992<br>E+06 | ,877      | ,454 |
|                              | Within Groups  | 7,417E+08 | 163 | 4,550<br>E+06 |           |      |
|                              | Total          | 7,537E+08 | 166 |               |           |      |

## Appendix-11: Test of the hypotheses in Bahrka

### First hypothesis

```
GET FILE='C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd
Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka\Main-Bahrka 166.sav'. CORRELATIONS /VARIABLES=Q14
Q18 /PRINT=TWOTAIL NOSIG /MISSING=PAIRWISE.
```

### Correlations

#### Notes

|                |   |
|----------------|---|
| Output Created | 25-Mrz-2019 12:21:51  |
| Comments       |   |
| Input          | Data  |
|                | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka\Main-Bahrka 166.sav |
|                | Active Dataset  |
|                | DataSet1  |
|                | Filter  |
|                | <none>  |
|                | Weight  |
|                | <none>  |
|                | Split File  |
|                | <none>  |
|                | N of Rows in Working Data File  |
|                | 192   |

|                        |                       |   |
|------------------------|-----------------------|---|
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing | User-defined missing values are treated as missing.   |
|                        | Cases Used            | Statistics for each pair of variables are based on all the cases with valid data for that pair. |
| Syntax                 |                       | CORRELATIONS<br>/VARIABLES=Q14 Q18<br>/PRINT=TWOTAIL NOSIG<br>/MISSING=PAIRWISE.                |
| Resources              | Processor Time        | 0:00:00.000   |
|                        | Elapsed Time          | 0:00:00.000   |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav

#### Correlations

|   |                     | Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Infrastructure satisfaction |
|---|---------------------|---|-----------------------------|
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Pearson Correlation | 1                                       | ,008                        |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     |   | ,914                        |
|   | N                   | 167                                     | 166                         |
| Infrastructure satisfaction             | Pearson Correlation | ,008                                    | 1                           |
|   | Sig. (2-tailed)     | ,914                                    |                             |
|   | N                   | 166                                     | 166                         |

T-TEST PAIRS=Q14 WITH Q18 (PAIRED) /CRITERIA=CI(.9500)  
/MISSING=ANALYSIS.

## T-Test

#### Notes

|                        |                                |  |
|------------------------|--------------------------------|--|
| Output Created         |                                | 25-Mrz-2019 12:24:16   |
| Comments               |                                |  |
| Input                  | Data                           | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav              |
|                        | Active Dataset                 | DataSet1   |
|                        | Filter                         | <none>   |
|                        | Weight                         | <none>   |
|                        | Split File                     | <none>   |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File | 192  |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing          | User defined missing values are treated as missing.  |
|                        | Cases Used                     | Statistics for each analysis are based on the cases with no missing or out-of-range data for any variable in the analysis. |

|           |   |  |             |
|-----------|---|--|-------------|
| Syntax    | T-TEST PAIRS=Q14 WITH Q18 (PAIRED)<br>/CRITERIA=CI(.9500)<br>/MISSING=ANALYSIS. |  |             |
| Resources | Processor Time  |  | 0:00:00.015 |
|           | Elapsed Time  |  | 0:00:00.007 |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE  
STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka\Main-Bahrka  
166.sav

#### Paired Samples Statistics

|        |   | Mean | N   | Std. Deviation | Std. Error Mean |
|--------|---|------|-----|----------------|-----------------|
| Pair 1 | Non-satisfactory income cause migration | 4,42 | 166 | ,530           | ,041            |
|        | Infrastructure satisfaction             | 4,63 | 166 | ,484           | ,038            |

#### Paired Samples Correlations

|        |   | N   | Correlation | Sig. |
|--------|---|-----|-------------|------|
| Pair 1 | Non-satisfactory income cause migration & Infrastructure satisfaction | 166 | ,008        | ,914 |

#### Paired Samples Test

|        |   | Paired Differences |                |                 |   |       | t      | df  | Sig. (2-tailed) |
|--------|---|--------------------|----------------|-----------------|---|-------|--------|-----|-----------------|
|        |   | Mean               | Std. Deviation | Std. Error Mean | 95% Confidence Interval of the Difference |       |        |     |                 |
|        |   |                    |                |                 | Lower                                     | Upper |        |     |                 |
| Pair 1 | Non-satisfactory income cause migration - Infrastructure satisfaction | -,217              | ,714           | ,055            | -,326                                     | -,107 | -3,912 | 165 | ,000            |

## Second hypothesis

PARTIAL CORR /VARIABLES=Q14 Q18 BY Q17  
/SIGNIFICANCE=TWOTAIL /MISSING=LISTWISE.

## Partial Corr

## Notes

|                        |  |   |
|------------------------|--|---|
| Output Created         | 25-Mrz-2019 12:40:09   |   |
| Comments               |  |   |
| Input                  | Data   | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav |
|                        | Active Dataset   | DataSet1  |
|                        | Filter   | <none>  |
|                        | Weight   | <none>  |
|                        | Split File   | <none>  |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File   | 192   |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing  | User defined missing values are treated as missing.   |
|                        | Cases Used   | Statistics are based on cases with no missing data for any variable listed.                                   |
| Syntax                 | PARTIAL CORR<br>/VARIABLES=Q14 Q18 BY Q17<br>/SIGNIFICANCE=TWOTAIL<br>/MISSING=LISTWISE. |   |
| Resources              | Processor Time   | 0:00:00.016   |
|                        | Elapsed Time   | 0:00:00.017   |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav

## Correlations

|  |   |                         | Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Infrastructure satisfaction |
|--|---|-------------------------|---|-----------------------------|
| <b>Control Variables</b>                             |   |                         |   |                             |
| Extent of the villagers satisfaction to the policies | Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Correlation             | 1,000                                   | ,012                        |
|  |   | Significance (2-tailed) | .                                       | ,882                        |
|  |   | Df                      | 0                                       | 163                         |
|  | Infrastructure satisfaction             | Correlation             | ,012                                    | 1,000                       |
|  |   | Significance (2-tailed) | ,882                                    | .                           |
|  |   | Df                      | 163                                     | 0                           |

ONEWAY Q14 Q18 BY Q17 /STATISTICS DESCRIPTIVES /MISSING ANALYSIS.

## Oneway

## Notes

|                |                      |
|----------------|----------------------|
| Output Created | 25-Mrz-2019 12:40:40 |
| Comments       |                      |

|                        |                                |   |
|------------------------|--------------------------------|---|
| Input                  | Data                           | C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav |
|                        | Active Dataset                 | DataSet1  |
|                        | Filter                         | <none>  |
|                        | Weight                         | <none>  |
|                        | Split File                     | <none>  |
|                        | N of Rows in Working Data File | 192   |
| Missing Value Handling | Definition of Missing          | User-defined missing values are treated as missing.   |
|                        | Cases Used                     | Statistics for each analysis are based on cases with no missing data for any variable in the analysis.        |
| Syntax                 |                                | ONEWAY Q14 Q18 BY Q17 /STATISTICS DESCRIPTIVES /MISSING ANALYSIS.   |
| Resources              | Processor Time                 | 0:00:00.015   |
|                        | Elapsed Time                   | 0:00:00.015   |

[DataSet1] C:\Hard D\TU-Dortmund\Fieldwork\CASE STUDY\Mergasur\_Bahrka\2nd Quant-Data Analysis\Bahrka>Main-Bahrka 166.sav

#### Descriptives

|   |            | N   | Mean | Std. Deviation | Std. Error | 95% Confidence Interval for Mean |             | Minimum | Maximum |
|---|------------|-----|------|----------------|------------|----------------------------------|-------------|---------|---------|
|   |            |     |      |                |            | Lower Bound                      | Upper Bound |         |         |
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Neutral    | 12  | 4,58 | ,515           | ,149       | 4,26                             | 4,91        | 4       | 5       |
|   | Agree      | 86  | 4,40 | ,538           | ,058       | 4,28                             | 4,51        | 3       | 5       |
|   | Very Agree | 68  | 4,41 | ,525           | ,064       | 4,28                             | 4,54        | 3       | 5       |
|   | Total      | 166 | 4,42 | ,530           | ,041       | 4,33                             | 4,50        | 3       | 5       |
| Infrastructure satisfaction             | Neutral    | 12  | 4,75 | ,452           | ,131       | 4,46                             | 5,04        | 4       | 5       |
|   | Agree      | 86  | 4,56 | ,500           | ,054       | 4,45                             | 4,67        | 4       | 5       |
|   | Very Agree | 68  | 4,71 | ,459           | ,056       | 4,59                             | 4,82        | 4       | 5       |
|   | Total      | 166 | 4,63 | ,484           | ,038       | 4,56                             | 4,71        | 4       | 5       |

#### ANOVA

|   |                | Sum of Squares | df  | Mean Square | F     | Sig. |
|---|----------------|----------------|-----|-------------|-------|------|
| Non-satisfactory income cause migration | Between Groups | ,374           | 2   | ,187        | ,663  | ,517 |
|   | Within Groups  | 45,945         | 163 | ,282        |       |      |
|   | Total          | 46,319         | 165 |             |       |      |
| Infrastructure satisfaction             | Between Groups | 1,007          | 2   | ,504        | 2,185 | ,116 |
|   | Within Groups  | 37,577         | 163 | ,231        |       |      |
|   | Total          | 38,584         | 165 |             |       |      |

## **Appendix-12: Qualitative Questions-Villagers-Mergasur**

1. What is your name?
2. How old are you?
3. Where are you from as an origin place?
4. Are you living now in your origin place?
5. What was your former job?
6. How many children do you have?
7. What level of education you have reached?
8. What is your current work and what is your income?
9. Are you satisfied with your income?
10. When you left your village?
11. What compensation you received for your losses and how you built your life?
12. Did you return to your origin place?
13. What factor pulls you to return to your village?
14. Have been someone anfaled from your family?
15. What do you want to tell us more?

## **Appendix-13: Transcription of the interview (Mergasur)**

## **Appendix-14: Qualitative Questions-Villagers -Bahrka**

1. What is your name?
2. How old are you?

3. Where are you from as an origin place?
4. Are you living now in your origin place?
5. What was your former job?
6. How many children do you have?
7. What level of education you have reached?
8. What is your current work and what is your income?
9. Are you satisfied with your income?
10. When you left your village?
11. What compensation you received for your losses and how you built your life
12. Did you return to your origin place?
13. Have been someone anfaled from your family?
14. What factor pulls you to return to your village?
15. What do you want to tell us more?

### **Appendix-15: Transcription of the interview (Bahrka)**

### **Appendix-16: Qualitative Questions-Expert-interview**

1. What is your name?
2. Where do you work?
3. At what level of management are you working or worked?
4. What level of education you have reached?
5. How long are you working in this position or worked?
6. How the policies were formulated for the rural areas and what was your role?
7. How were the policies outputs in your sector, were they acceptable?
8. Why migration happened and how villagers can be motivated to return?

9. Extra information?

## **Appendix-17: Tanscription of the expert interviewee**



## Bibliography

- A.U.G.U.R. (2012). The Role and Structure of Civil Society Organizations Governance. *European Commission*.
- Abazaami, J. (2013). Synergies for Wealth Creation and Poverty Reduction through Agriculture in Ghana. *Essen: Klartext Verlag*.
- Abbas, A. (2012). *Leader Abdul Karim Qasim*. Planning path Magazine, 11.
- Abercrombie, N., Hill, S., & Turner, B. (2004). *Dictionary of Sociology*. Penguin Reference.
- Abesamis, K. (2016). Archival Research. [www.youtube.com](http://www.youtube.com).
- Academy, S. (2012). Social Class in the United States. *Abgerufen am 24. 4 2018 von [https://saylordotorg.github.io/text\\_sociology-understanding-and-changing-the-social-world-comprehensive-edition/s11-03-social-class-in-the-united-sta.html](https://saylordotorg.github.io/text_sociology-understanding-and-changing-the-social-world-comprehensive-edition/s11-03-social-class-in-the-united-sta.html)*
- Acosta, P., Fajnzylber, P., & Lopez, J. H. (2007). The Impact of Remittances on Poverty and Human Capital. *World Bank*.
- Adelman, I. (1984). *Beyond Export*. World Development, 973.
- Administration, U. E. (23. 10 2003). Natural Gas Weekly Update Archive. *Abgerufen am 17. 6 2018 von [www.eia.gov](http://www.eia.gov): [https://www.eia.gov/naturalgas/weekly/archivenew\\_ngwu/2003/10\\_23/](https://www.eia.gov/naturalgas/weekly/archivenew_ngwu/2003/10_23/)*
- AEG. (2005). Government/ Public sector / Private sector. *Frankfurt*.
- Afric, P. (2000). Rural District Planning in Zimbabwe. *Bulawayo: Environmental Planning Issues*.
- Afsar, R. (2003). Dynamics of poverty, development and population mobility. *Bangkok: Economic and Social Commission For Asia And The Pacific*.
- Agri.Info. (2015). *Abgerufen am 10. 9 2017 von [www.agriinfo.in](http://www.agriinfo.in): <http://www.agriinfo.in/default.aspx?page=topic&superid=7&topicid=1446>*
- Agri-Info. (2015). Rural Sociology and Educational Psychology. *Abgerufen am 21. 4 2018 von [www.agriinfo.in](http://www.agriinfo.in): <http://www.agriinfo.in/default.aspx?page=topic&superid=7&topicid=568>*
- AGSM, E. (9. 10 1997). [www.agsm.edu.au](http://www.agsm.edu.au). *Abgerufen am 16. 8 2016 von <http://www.agsm.edu.au/bobm/teaching/ECL/>*
- Ahmed, A. (2008). Ontological, Epistemological and Methodological Assumptions. *University of Exeter*.
- AK, N. (27. 10 2009). [www.gov.krd](http://www.gov.krd). *Abgerufen am 10. 8 2016 von Kurdistan farmers are demanding an increase of tariff on the imported agricultural products: <http://www.gov.krd/a/d.aspx?a=32133&l=14&r=81&s=010000>*
- Akrani, G. (11. 9 2010). Monopoly Market Structure - Meaning, Features and Types. *Abgerufen am 22. 9 2017 von [www.kalyan-city.blogspot.de](http://www.kalyan-city.blogspot.de): <http://kalyan-city.blogspot.de/2010/11/monopoly-market-structure-meaning.html>*
- Aleshkovski, I., & Iontsev, V. (1990). *MATHEMATICAL MODELS OF MIGRATION. SYSTEMS ANALYSIS AND MODELING OF INTEGRATED WORLD SYSTEMS*.
- Al-Esyani, N. R. (26. 5 2014). 26 Gulan, a ceremony revolution or re-life. *Abgerufen am 2. 10 2016 von [www.kdp.info](http://www.kdp.info): <http://www.kdp.info/a/d.aspx?l=14&a=65059>*
- Ali, S. (23. 8 2019). <https://www.kurdistan24.net>. *Abgerufen am 6. 27 2020 von Evacuation of villages continues in Kurdistan as Turkish shellings intensify against PKK: <https://www.kurdistan24.net/en/news/6fb6eb62-d278-41cd-9d82-89d2580b53e8>*
- Aljazeera, N. (23. 6 2016). Iraqi Kurdistan .. deteriorating economic conditions. *Abgerufen am 11. 3 2018 von [www.aljazeera.net](http://www.aljazeera.net): <http://www.aljazeera.net/programs/economyandpeople/2016/3/26/%D9%83%D8%B1%D8%AF%D8%B3%D8%AA%D8%A7%D9%86-%D8%A7%D9%84%D8%B9%D8%B1%D8%A7%D9%82-%D8%A3%D9%88%D8%B6%D8%A7%D8%B9-%D8%A7%D9%82%D8%AA%D8%B5%D8%A7%D8%AF%D9%8A%D8%A9-%D9%85%D8%AA%D8%B1%D8%AF%D9%8A%D8%>*
- Al-Karkhi. (9. 2 2012). Khanaqin. *Abgerufen am 12. 1 2014 von The beginning of the Arabization: [http://www.khanaqin.com/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=194:2012-02-09-19-22-18&catid=37:2010-05-24-17-54-19&Itemid=82](http://www.khanaqin.com/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=194:2012-02-09-19-22-18&catid=37:2010-05-24-17-54-19&Itemid=82)*

- Allahdadi, F., & Aref, A. (2011). *Human Resource Development for Poverty Alleviation in Iran*. Life Science Journal, 3.
- Al-Shammary, F. (19. 9 2010). President Saddam Hussein speaks of Massoud Barzani and his party betrayal. *Abgerufen am 2. 3 2015 von www.youtube.com: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=w5w7QpX2V90*
- Al-Shbiel, A. O. (2017). *Arabization and Its Effect on the Arabic Language*. Journal of Language Teaching and Research, 469-475.
- Altonji, T. (28. 10 2016). www.akhbaar.org. *Abgerufen am 10. 8 2017 von Oriental Question and Search for Antique Notebooks: http://www.akhbaar.org/home/2016/10/219583.html*
- Alvi, M. (2016). *A Manual for Selecting Sampling Techniques in Research*. University of Karachi, Iqra University.
- Ankara, A. E. (16. 4 2008). Turkish migration to Australia. *Abgerufen am 21. 4 2018 von http://turkey.embassy.gov.au/anka/TurkMigration.html*
- Anríquez, G., & Stamoulis, K. (2007). *Rural Development and Poverty Reduction: Is Agriculture Still the Key?* FAO.
- Aqrawi, S. (30. 9 2010). www.reuters.com/. *Abgerufen am 10. 10 2017 von Investment a "success story" in Iraqi Kurdistan: http://www.reuters.com/article/us-iraq-kurdistan-investment/investment-a-success-story-in-iraqi-kurdistan-idUSTRE68T0AR20100930*
- Ashley, C., & Carney, D. (1999). *Sustainable Livelihoods*. London: DFID.
- Astone., N., & McLanahan, S. (1991). *Family Structure, Parental Practices And High School Completion*. American Sociological Review, 309–320.
- Aytar, O. (1995). *Fifti Fifti*. Istanbul: Wesanen Nüjen.
- Aziz, M. (2002). *Historical Annual Average Rainfall in Nothren Iraq*. Erbil: FAO.
- B.A.M.S. (2016). *2016 Strategic Social Reporting-Germany*. BAMS.
- Badewi, A. (13. 3 2013). *Ontology, Epistemology, and Methodology - Research Methodology Course*. *Abgerufen am 20. 4 2016 von www.youtube.com: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kf8wGvunyG8*
- Bahns, K. M. (2005). *Rural to Urban Migration in Developing countries*. University Konstanz.
- Bank, T. W. (22. 7 2013). www.worldbank.org. *Abgerufen am 28. 8 2017 von Defining Civil Society: http://web.worldbank.org/WBSITE/EXTERNAL/TOPICS/CSO/0,,contentMDK:20101499~menuPK:244752~pagePK:220503~piPK:220476~theSitePK:228717,00.html*
- Bank, W. (1995). *World Bank Participation Sourcebook*. Washington D.C.: The World Bank.
- Bartelmus, P. (1994). *Environment, Growth and Development: The Concepts and Strategies of Sustainable Development*. London: Routledge.
- Bartsch, M., Brandt, A., & Steinvorth, D. (7. 9 2010). *A Sorry History of Self-Deception and Wasted Opportunities*. *Abgerufen am 31. 3 2018 von www.spiegel.de: http://www.spiegel.de/international/germany/turkish-immigration-to-germany-a-sorry-history-of-self-deception-and-wasted-opportunities-a-716067.html*
- Barwari, N. (2013). *Rebuilding peace: Land and water management in the Kurdistan Region of Notheren Iraq*. Environmental Law Institute and United Nations Environment Programme., 363-385.
- Basu, K. (1990). *Agrarian Structure and Economic Underdevelopment*. CH:Harwood Academic Publishers GmbH.
- Bateman, H., Curtis, S., & McAdam, K. (2006). *Dictionary of Agriculture 3rd*. London: A & C Black Publishers Ltd.
- Baxewan, H. (16. 12 2008). http://kurdipedia.info. *Abgerufen am 10. 6 2016 von بهحرکه : http://kurdipedia.info/?q=%D8%A8%DB%95%D8%AD%D8%B1%DA%A9%DB%95&lng=8*
- BBC. (1. 11 2015). *Uprising March 1991*. *Abgerufen am 1. 11 2015 von http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/shared/spl/hi/middle\_east/02/iraq\_events/html/uprisings.stm*
- BBC, N.-1. (17. 5 2011). www.bbc.com. *Abgerufen am 10. 3 2020 von Rwanda: How the genocide happened: https://www.bbc.com/news/world-africa-13431486*
- BBC, N.-2. (7. 4 2016). www.bbc.com. *Abgerufen am 17. 7 2016 von Remembering the Kurdish uprising of 1991: http://www.bbc.com/news/in-pictures-35967389*
- BBC, N.-3. (4. 4 2016). www.bbc.com. *Abgerufen am 23. 7 2016 von Migrant crisis: Migration to Europe explained in seven charts: http://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-34131911*
- BBC, N.-4. (16. 3 1988). 1988: Thousands die in Halabja gas attack. *Abgerufen am 26. 1 2014 von On this Day: http://news.bbc.co.uk/onthisday/hi/dates/stories/march/16/newsid\_4304000/4304853.stm*
- BBC, N.-5. (2019). www.bbc.co.uk. *Abgerufen am 28. 12 2019 von Causes and impacts relating to forced and voluntary migration: https://www.bbc.co.uk/bitesize/guides/z8g334j/revision/3*
- Beccio, S., Chalasani, R., Vega, P. C., Millinga, M., Shen, Q., & Slezcic, L. (2007). *Private Sector*. Roma: IFAD.

- Bell, M., & Ward, G. (2000). *Comparing Temporary Mobility with Permanent Migration*. *Tourism Geographies*, 97-107.
- Bengio, O. (2012). *The Kurds of Iraq: Building a State Within a State*. Lynne Rienner Pub.
- Berman, P. (1978). *The Study of Macro and Micro Implementation*. *Public Policy*, 157-184.
- Beyat, F. (2007). State of Shahrzul - Kirkuk in the Ottoman era 'Problems of history and administrative organization'. Beirut: Center for Arab Unity Studies. Abgerufen am 10. 8 2017 von [www.iraqiwomensleague.com](http://www.iraqiwomensleague.com/mod.php?mod=news&modfile=item&itemid=27502#.WYw3l-mZHIU): <http://www.iraqiwomensleague.com/mod.php?mod=news&modfile=item&itemid=27502#.WYw3l-mZHIU>
- Blackstone, A. (2017). [www.flatworldknowledge.com](http://www.flatworldknowledge.com). Abgerufen am 4. 8 2017 von *Principles of Sociological Inquiry: Qualitative and Quantitative Methods*: [https://catalog.flatworldknowledge.com/bookhub/reader/3585?e=blackstone\\_1.0-ch02\\_s01#blackstone\\_1.0-ch02\\_s01](https://catalog.flatworldknowledge.com/bookhub/reader/3585?e=blackstone_1.0-ch02_s01#blackstone_1.0-ch02_s01)
- Boghean, C. (2016). *The Phenomenon of Migration Opportunities and Challenges*. *The USV Annals of Economics and Public Administration*.
- Borras, S., & McKinley, T. (2006). *The Unresolved Land Reform Debate: Beyond State-Led or Market-Led Models*. Policy Research Brief, No. 2.
- Botany, A. A. (23. 5 2012). The anniversary of the 63 th of the outbreak of the revolution Gulan. Abgerufen am 10. 2 2016 von [www.sotakhr.com](http://www.sotakhr.com): <http://www.sotakhr.com/2006/index.php?id=15872>
- Bouma, G., & Atkinson, G. (1995). *A Handbook of Social Science Research: A Comprehensive and Practical Guide for Students*. Oxford University Press.
- Bourdieu, P. (1985). *The Forms of Capital*. In *Handbook of Theory and Research For The Sociology Of Education*, 241–258.
- Bourdieu, Pierre, & Wacquant, L. (1992). *An Invitation to Reflexive Sociology*. Chicago : University of Chicago Press.
- Boyce, C., & Neale, P. (2006). CONDUCTING IN-DEPTH INTERVIEWS: A Guide for Designing and Conducting In-Depth Interviews for Evaluation Input. *P ATHFINDER INTERNATIONAL*.
- Brajdic, A. (12. 12 2019). <https://blog.prototypr.io>. Abgerufen am 27. 6 2017 von *What the Hell Is 'Team Culture' and Why Is It so Important?*: <https://blog.prototypr.io/what-the-hell-is-team-culture-and-why-is-it-so-important-d923141854e5>
- Britannica, T. E. (2018). Rural society. Abgerufen am 21. 4 2018 von [www.britannica.com](http://www.britannica.com): <https://www.britannica.com/topic/rural-society>
- Brooks, R. B. (24. 3 2017). The Great Puritan Migration. Abgerufen am 17. 3 2018 von [www.historyofmassachusetts.org](http://www.historyofmassachusetts.org): <http://www.historyofmassachusetts.org/the-great-puritan-migration/>
- Brown, G. (2012). Marketing Structure. Abgerufen am 16. 8 2016 von *Tutoring and Learning Centre*: [www.georgebrown.ca/tlc](http://www.georgebrown.ca/tlc)
- Bruinessen, M. V. (1992). *Agha, Shaikh and State*. In M. V. Bruinessen, Agha, Shaikh and State (S. 15). London: Zed Books Ltd.
- Bryman, A. (2012). *Social research methods 4th*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Byerlee, D., Diao, X., & Jackson, C. (2005). *Agriculture, Rural Development, and Pro-poor Growth*. Washington: The International Bank for Reconstruction and Development / The World Bank.
- Byron, G. (1969). *Education and Political System*. Michigan,: Addison-Wesley Publishing Company.
- C.S.D. (5. 6 2018). What is Sustainable Rural Development? Abgerufen am 19. 5 2018 von [www.csd-i.org](http://www.csd-i.org): <http://www.csd-i.org/sustainable-rural-development>
- Caldwell, L. K., & Schrader-Frechette. (1993). *Policy of Land: Law and Ethics*. Maryland: Rowman & Littlefield.
- Caldwell, S. E., & Mays, N. (2012). *Studying policy implementation using a macro,meso and micro frame analysis*. Health Res Policy Syst.
- Cariño, L. V. (kein Datum). The concept of Governance . *University of the Philippines*.
- Carletto, G., Covarrubias, K., Davis, B., Krausova, M., Stamoulis, K., Winters, P., & Zezza, A. (2007). *Rural income generating activities in developing countries: re-assessing the evidence*. *Journal of Agricultural and Development Economics*, 146-193.
- Carney, D. (2003). *Sustainable Livelihoods Approches*. Toronto: DFID.
- Case, K., & Fair, R. (2007). *Principles of Economics*. Upper Saddle River, NJ.
- Cassidy, R. (2000). *Involuntary and Voluntary Migrant Estimates*. Sabre Systems, Inc.

- Castle, E. N. (2002). Social Capital: An Interdisciplinary Concept. *Rural Sociology Society*.
- Castles, S., & Miller, M. J. (10. 7 2009). Migration in the Asia Pacific Region. *Abgerufen am 24. 3 2018 von www.migrationpolicy.org: https://www.migrationpolicy.org/article/migration-asia-pacific-region*
- Chambers, R., & Conway, G. R. (1991). Sustainable Rural Livelihood, Practical Concepts for the 21 Century. *Institute of Development Studies*.
- Cheema, R. G., & A., D. (2007). In R. G. Cheema, & D. A., Decentralizing Governance Emerging Concepts and Practices. *Washington, D.C.: Brookings institution press*.
- ChinaTravelNews. (17. 8 2015). www.chinatravelnews.com. *Abgerufen am 15. 8 2016 von China to build over 6,000 model tourism villages by 2020 to boost rural tourism: http://www.chinatravelnews.com/article/94835*
- Chuhan-Pole, P., & M. Buitano, V. (26. 6 2016). Development Policies, Institutions Improve in Few African Countries. *Abgerufen am 29. 6 2018 von www.worldbank.org: http://documents.worldbank.org/curated/en/733581467039657221/Assessing-Africas-policies-and-institutions-2015-CPIA-results-for-Africa*
- Clark, V. L., & Creswell, J. W. (2007). Designing and Conducting Mixed Methods Research. *SAGE Publications*.
- CNN, r. (6. 2 2009). www.cnn.com. *Abgerufen am 9. 1 2014 von Irbil construction boom: http://edition.cnn.com/video/?/video/international/2009/02/06/mme.a.irbil.construction.cnn*
- Coffman, E. (8. 8 2008). www.christianitytoday.com. *Abgerufen am 16. 7 2016 von What does history say about the first Christians of Africa?: http://www.christianitytoday.com/history/2008/august/what-does-history-say-about-first-christians-of-africa.html*
- Collection, F. c. (2003-2012). Satisfaction. *Princeton University*.
- Collins. (2006). Collins COBUILD Advanced Learner's English Dictionary. *Harper Collins*.
- Congress, U. (1991). Agricultural Commodities as Industrial Raw Materials. *Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office*.
- Cope, M. (2016). Coding Qualitative Data.
- Creswell, J. W. (2009). Research Design 3rd Qualitative, Quantitative, and Mixed Methods Approaches. *Los Angeles: SAG*
- Crotty, M. (2003). The Foundations of Social Research: Meaning and Perspectives in the Research Process. *London: Sage Publications*.
- Culture, F. o. (2016). Effects of Agriculture on the Industrial Revolution. *Abgerufen am 14. 9 2017 von wwwFOUNDATIONS.uwgb.org: http://foundations.uwgb.org/agriculture/*
- Cunguara, B. (2001). ASSESSING STRATEGIES TO REDUCE POVERTY IN RURAL MOZAMBIQUE. *Vienna: Institute of Agricultural and Forestry Economics Department of Economics and Social Sciences*.
- D.P.I. (9. 9 2009). www.un.org. *Abgerufen am 27. 8 2017 von Civil Society: http://www.un.org/en/sections/resources/civil-society/*
- Dalal-Clayton, B., Dent, D., & Dubois, O. (2003). Rural Planning in Developing countries. *London: Earthscan*.
- Dalal-Clayton, B., Dent, D., & Dubois, O. (2003). Rural Planning in Developing countries. In B. Dalal-Clayton, D. Dent, & O. Dubois, Supporting Natural Resource Management and Sustainable Livelihoods (S. 8). *London: Earthscan*.
- Dartmouth, U. o. (2018). Decision-making process. *Abgerufen am 15. 4 2018 von www.umassd.edu: https://www.umassd.edu/fycm/decisionmaking/process/*
- Davidson, H., & Hitti, P. K. (5 1988). THE OTTOMAN PERIOD, 1534-1918. *Abgerufen am 19. 2 2014 von Library of Congress Country Studies: http://lcweb2.loc.gov/cgi-bin/query/r?frd/cstdy:@field%28DOCID+iq0018%29*
- Demko, G., J.-Ross, & H.M-Schnell, G. (1970). A Reader. Population Geography, *McGraw-Hill*.
- DeNavas-Walt, Proctor, & Smith. (2010).
- Denning, S. (23. 3 2012). www.forbes.com. *Abgerufen am 15. 10 2016 von What Maslow Missed: http://www.forbes.com/sites/stevedenning/2012/03/29/what-maslow-missed/#63956cf6455a*
- Denscombe, M. (2010). The Good Research Guide 4th : for small-scale social research projects. *New York: Open University Press*.
- Department, G. f. (2013). Codification of testimonies of victims and survivors of the violations and crimes practiced by the Ba'ath against the Iraqi people. *Baghdad: Guidance from the Department / Department of Information*.

- Development, D. f. (18. 7 2017). [www.sustainabledevelopment.un.org](http://www.sustainabledevelopment.un.org). Abgerufen am 26. 8 2017 von Major groups and other stakeholders: <https://sustainabledevelopment.un.org/mgos>
- Dhakal, T. N. (2002). *The Role of Non-Governmental Organisations in the Improvement of Livelihood in Nepal*. Tampere: University of Tampere.
- Diakosavvas, D. (2006). *Coherence of Agricultural and Rural Development Policies*. Paris: OECD.
- Dictionaries, O. (17. 7 2016). [www.oxforddictionaries.com](http://www.oxforddictionaries.com). Abgerufen am 17. 7 2016 von Well-being: <http://www.oxforddictionaries.com/definition/english/well-being>
- Dictionary, B. (2017). Income. Abgerufen am 18. 9 2017 von [www.businessdictionary.com](http://www.businessdictionary.com): <http://www.businessdictionary.com/definition/income.html>
- Dictionary, C. A. (2018). Satisfaction. Abgerufen am 31. 3 2018 von [www.collinsdictionary.com](http://www.collinsdictionary.com): <https://www.collinsdictionary.com/dictionary/english/satisfaction>
- Dictionary, C. C. (2006). *Harper Collins Publisher 2001*.
- Dictionary, C. E. (2015). *Antidevelopment*. HarperCollins Publishers.
- Dictionary, R. H. (2010). Hood. Abgerufen am 2. 10 2017 von <https://www.thefreedictionary.com/hood>
- Do, Q.-T., & Iyer, L. (2003). *Land Rights and Economic Development*. World Bank.
- Dolan, A., & Peasgood, T. (2012). *Measuring Well-Being for Public Policy: Preferences or Experiences?* The Journal of Legal Studies.
- Doling, J., & Ronald, R. (2010). *Home Ownership and Asset-based Welfare*. Springerlink.
- Dukeshire, S., & Thurlow, J. (2002). *A Brief Guide to Understanding Policy Development. Rural Communities Impacting Policy Project*.
- Eder, C., & Halla, M. (2018). *On the Origin and Composition of the German East-West Population Gap IZA DP No. 12031*. IZA Institute .
- Elinor, O. (2000). *Social Capital: A Fad or a Fundamental Concept*, in Social Capital. Washington DC: The World Bank.
- Elliott, J. A. (2006). *An Introduction to Sustainable Development*. London: Routledge.
- Encyclopedia, N. W. (22. 9 2016). Human migration. Abgerufen am 17. 3 2018 von [www.newworldencyclopedia.org](http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org): [http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Human\\_migration](http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Human_migration)
- Eruera, A. (2008). *Rural Tourism Development in the eastern Hokianga area*. Auckland University.
- Erwani, F. (2013). *Kurd's Genocide Barzani's Genocide*. Erbil.
- F.A.O. (2000). *Rural Population*. F.A.O.
- F.A.O. (2002). *The WTO Negotiations on Agriculture*. Roma: FAO.
- F.A.O.a. (2018). *Rural Income Generating Activities*. Abgerufen am 27. 4 2015 von [www.fao.org](http://www.fao.org): <http://www.fao.org/economic/riaga/rural-income-generating-activities/en/>
- Farrington, J., & Carney, D. (1998). *Natural Resource Management and Institutional Change*. Routledge.
- Fischer, S., & Khan, M. S. (3 1999). *Sub-Saharan Africa Economic Policy and Outlook for Growth*. Abgerufen am 29. 6 2018 von [www.imf.org](http://www.imf.org): <http://www.imf.org/external/pubs/ft/fandd/1999/03/hernande.htm#author>
- Focus, I. (2001). *Rural India: Where is It?* DhandlaxmiBand.
- Fowler, A. (1997). *Understanding Development NGOs*. Earthscan.
- Francis, E. (2006). *Poverty: Causes, Responses and Consequences in Rural South Africa*. London: London School of Economics.
- Fujimura, M. (2000). *The Welfare State, the Middle Class, and the Welfare Society*. Review of Population and Social Policy, S. 1/23.
- G.S.S. (2008). *Ghana living standards survey report of the fifth round (GLSS 5)*. Accra,: Ghana Statistical Service.
- Gallent, N., Juntti, M., & Kidd, S. (2008). *Introduction to Rural Planning*. New York,: Routledge.
- Gaventa, J., & Valderrama, C. (1999). *Participation, Citizenship and Local Governance*. Institute of Development Studies.
- Gaworecki, W. W. (2003). *Turystyka*. Warszawa.
- GCU. (20. 12 2012). *Causes and Effects of Migration*. Abgerufen am 12. 6 2017 von [www.markedbyteachers.com](http://www.markedbyteachers.com): <http://www.markedbyteachers.com/gcse/geography/causes-and-effects-of-migration.html>
- Gibson, J., McKenzie, D., & Rohorua, H. (2013). *Development Impacts of Seasonal and Temporary Migration: A Review of Evidence from the Pacific and Southeast Asia*. Asia & the Pacific Policy Studies, 18-32.

- Göktürk, D., Gramling, D., & Kaes, A. (2007). *Germany in Transit: Nation and Migration, 1955-2005*. California : University of California Press.
- Gold, M. V. (8 2007). What is sustainable agriculture? . Abgerufen am 14. 9 2017 von [www.nal.usda.gov/afsic/sustainable-agriculture-definitions-and-terms#toc2](http://www.nal.usda.gov/afsic/sustainable-agriculture-definitions-and-terms#toc2)
- Goldstein, J. R. (2006 ). *Internal migration and household living*. In DEMOGRAPHIC RESEARCH (S. 519). Konrad-Zuse Str. 1, D-18057 Rostock . GERMANY: Max-Planck-Gesellschaft.
- Gollin, D., Lagakos, D., & Waugh, M. E. (2012). *The Agricultural Productivity Gap in Developing Countries*.
- Government, K. R. (2020). [www.gov.krd](https://gov.krd/english/government/entities/). Abgerufen am 18. 2 2020 von <https://gov.krd/english/government/entities/>
- Government, K. (19. 5 2008). Risks of the Landmine and the rights of legal victims. Abgerufen am 10. 2 2016 von <http://cabinet.gov.krd>: <http://cabinet.gov.krd/a/d.aspx?a=24274&l=14>
- Government, K. R. (4. 6 2006). [www.cabinet.gov.krd](http://cabinet.gov.krd). Abgerufen am 19. 8 2017 von *Kurdistan Region Investment Law (July 2006)*: <http://cabinet.gov.krd/p/p.aspx?l=12&s=020000&r=315&p=293>
- Government, K. R. (15. 3 2014). Halabja designated as Kurdistan Region's fourth province. Abgerufen am 10. 6 2015 von <http://cabinet.gov.krd>: <http://cabinet.gov.krd/a/d.aspx?l=12&a=51096>
- Governorate, H. (9. 6 2001). Abgerufen am 10. 6 2016 von *Erbil city center*: <http://hawlergov.org>
- Governorate, H. (1. 1 2016). Erbil. Abgerufen am 1. 1 2016 von <http://hawler.gov.krd/en/page.php?id=1330710574>
- Governorate, H. (22. 2 2017). [www.hawlergov.org](http://hawlergov.org). Abgerufen am 22. 2 2017 von *District of Mergasor*: <http://hawlergov.org/ku/region.php?id=1330759021>
- Greece, R. (13. 8 2016). Brain Drain Special: The Push and Pull Factors. Written by David Kazamias. Abgerufen am 14. 4 2018 von [www.reloadgreece.com](http://www.reloadgreece.com): <https://www.reloadgreece.com/brain-drain-special-the-push-and-pull-factors-written-by-david-kazamias/>
- Greenwood, M. J., & Hunt, G. L. (1975). *The Early History of Migration Research Revisited*. University of Colorado, Boulder, CO.
- Gregory, A. (1. 2 2018). What Market Saturation Means for Your Business. Abgerufen am 25. 5 2018 von [www.thebalancesmb.com](http://www.thebalancesmb.com): <https://www.thebalancesmb.com/what-market-saturation-means-for-your-business-4158228>
- Grinstein-Weiss, M., & Curley, J. (2003). *Individual Development Accounts in Rural Communities*. Building and sustaining community assets, 328-340.
- Groeneveld, E. (15. 3 2017). Early Human Migration. Abgerufen am 18. 3 2018 von [www.ancient.eu](http://www.ancient.eu): <https://www.ancient.eu/article/1070/early-human-migration/>
- Group, N. (2008). *Common Framework on Market-Oriented Agricultural Advisory Services*. Neuchâtel Group.
- Group, T. W. (2012). Factors in Successful Rural Development: Examples from Northeast Brazil. Abgerufen am 19. 5 2018 von [www.worldbank.org](http://lnweb90.worldbank.org/oed/oeddoclib.nsf/DocUNIDViewForJavaSearch/BCE7303A8A66EA6A852567F5005D8363): <http://lnweb90.worldbank.org/oed/oeddoclib.nsf/DocUNIDViewForJavaSearch/BCE7303A8A66EA6A852567F5005D8363>
- Group, V. (2018). Vanguard portfolio allocation models. Abgerufen am 12. 3 2018 von [www.vanguard.com](http://personal.vanguard.com): <https://personal.vanguard.com/us/insights/saving-investing/model-portfolio-allocations>
- Grunert, J. (2017). What Is Market Structure? Abgerufen am 22. 9 2017 von [www.business.lovetoknow.com](http://business.lovetoknow.com): [http://business.lovetoknow.com/wiki/Define\\_Market\\_Structure](http://business.lovetoknow.com/wiki/Define_Market_Structure)
- H.R.W. (29. 10 1990). Genocide in Iraq. Abgerufen am 11. 2 2016 von [www.hrw.org](http://www.hrw.org): <https://www.hrw.org/report/2006/08/14/genocide-iraq-anfal-campaign-against-kurds/report-summary>
- H.R.W. (1993). *Genocide in Iraq The Anfal Campaign Against the Kurds*. New York · Washington · Los Angeles · London: Human Rights Watch.
- H.R.W. (2004). *The 1988 Anfal Campaign*. Human Rights Watch, 9.
- H.R.W. (10. 11 2009). On Vulnerable Ground. Abgerufen am 11. 2 2016 von [www.hrw.org](http://www.hrw.org): <https://www.hrw.org/report/2009/11/10/vulnerable-ground/violence-against-minority-communities-nineveh-provinces-disputed>
- H.R.W. (2004). *Claims in Conflict Reversing Ethnic Cleansing in Northern Iraq* . Human Rights Watch .
- Haar, C. (2009). *Rural-Urban migration, gender and welfare in Ghana; who gains and who does not?*
- Haas, H. d. (2014). *Migration Theory*. International Migration Institute (IMI), Oxford Department of International Development.
- Hagen -Zanker, J. (2008). *Why do people migrate*. Munich Personal RePEc Archive.

- Hansen, A. (2003). Mission of the International Association for the Study of Forced Migrants.
- Harkness, J. (2011). Food security and National Security Learning from China's approach to managing its wheat supplies. *Institute for Agriculture and Trade Policy*.
- Harrell, M. C., & Bradley, M. A. (2009). Data Collection Methods: Semi-Structured Interviews and Focus Groups. *R AND Corporation*.
- Hashim, I. (2007). *Independent child migration and education in Ghana, Development and*. Institute of Social Studies, 911-931.
- Haug, R. (1999). *From Integrated Development to Sustainable Livelihoods: What is the Role of Food and Agriculture?* Forum for Development Studies, 181-201.
- Healy, M. (7. 6 2011). Ravenstein's Laws of Migration. Abgerufen am 17. 10 2015 von [www.harpercollege.edu: http://www.harpercollege.edu/mhealy/migrat/xp/mgraven.htm](http://www.harpercollege.edu: http://www.harpercollege.edu/mhealy/migrat/xp/mgraven.htm)
- Heritage, A. (2016). [www.thefreedictionary.com](http://www.thefreedictionary.com/public+policy). Abgerufen am 22. 8 2017 von *Public Policy*: <http://www.thefreedictionary.com/public+policy>
- Heshmati, A. (2007). Labor Market Policy Options of the Kurdistan Regional Government. *Bonn: IZA*.
- Holobinko, A. (2012). *Theoretical and Methodological Approaches to Understanding Human Migration Patterns and their Utility in Forensic Human Identification Cases*. Societies, 42-62.
- Hu, X. (4. 1 2012). [www.migrationpolicy.org](http://www.migrationpolicy.org/article/chinas-young-rural-urban-migrants-search-fortune-happiness-and-independence). Abgerufen am 14. 7 2016 von *China's Young Rural-to-Urban Migrants*: <http://www.migrationpolicy.org/article/chinas-young-rural-urban-migrants-search-fortune-happiness-and-independence>
- Huitt, W. (2017). *Hierarchy of Needs*. Thousand Oaks, CA: SAGE Publications.
- Hussein, A. (15. 7 2015). Revolution and leader 15.July.1958. Abgerufen am 10. 8 2017 von [www.akhbaar.org: http://www.akhbaar.org/home/2015/7/194667.html](http://www.akhbaar.org: http://www.akhbaar.org/home/2015/7/194667.html)
- Hussen, N. (8. 7 2018). Producers have lost hope of a low selling price for their products. Abgerufen am 8. 7 2018 von [www.rudaw.net: http://www.rudaw.net/sorani/business/06072018](http://www.rudaw.net: http://www.rudaw.net/sorani/business/06072018)
- I.A.U. (2010). Erbil Governorate Profile. *IAU*.
- I.E.D. (9. 7 2015). [www.ied.eu](https://ied.eu/the-importance-of-agriculture-for-the-economy-and-the-specific-features-of-mediterranean-agriculture/). Abgerufen am 14. 9 2017 von *The Importance of Agriculture For the Economy and The Specific Features of Mediterranean Agriculture*: <https://ied.eu/the-importance-of-agriculture-for-the-economy-and-the-specific-features-of-mediterranean-agriculture/>
- I.F.A.D. (2007). *Privet sector development and Partnership strategy*. Rome: IFAD.
- I.O.M. (2004). *Glossery of Migration*. Geneva: *International Organization for Migration*.
- IAU, I. (2009). [www.iauiraq.org](http://www.iauiraq.org/gp/erbil/default.asp). Abgerufen am 27. 3 2017 von *Erbil*: <http://www.iauiraq.org/gp/erbil/default.asp>
- Ibrahim, A. A. (2012). Promoting women's participation in decision-making at the local level. *Dortmund: TU-Dortmund University*.
- IFAD. (1999). *Roma: IFAD*.
- Ifiimoaei, C. (2015). GOOD GOVERNANCE: NORMATIVE VS. DESCRIPTIVE DIMENSION. Abgerufen am 10. 8 2017 von [www.ebscohost.com: http://web.a.ebscohost.com/abstract?direct=true&profile=ehost&scope=site&authtype=crawler&jrnl=23602554&AN=115966496&h=V8hCU2SIQfilvEk4UmEo%2bEiNrKs3Ok7U%2fh5O%2fU9igxRZrmwmix0kX3KepC%2fph%2b4Ktt111H05JyqANfuaCUj1gg%3d%3d&crl=f&resultNs=AdminWebAuth&resul](http://web.a.ebscohost.com/abstract?direct=true&profile=ehost&scope=site&authtype=crawler&jrnl=23602554&AN=115966496&h=V8hCU2SIQfilvEk4UmEo%2bEiNrKs3Ok7U%2fh5O%2fU9igxRZrmwmix0kX3KepC%2fph%2b4Ktt111H05JyqANfuaCUj1gg%3d%3d&crl=f&resultNs=AdminWebAuth&resul)
- Incorporated, D. M. (8. 2 2001). Iraq is under siege. Abgerufen am 5. 10 2017 von [www.albayan.ae: http://www.albayan.ae/five-senses/2001-02-08-1.1120578](http://www.albayan.ae: http://www.albayan.ae/five-senses/2001-02-08-1.1120578)
- Institute, K. (12. 1 2017). [www.institutkurde.org](http://www.institutkurde.org/en/info/the-kurdish-population-1232551004). Abgerufen am 19. 8 2017 von *The Kurdish population*: <http://www.institutkurde.org/en/info/the-kurdish-population-1232551004>
- Iraq, N. C. (2014). Erbil NCCI Governorate Profile. *NCCI*.
- Irshad, H. (2010). *Rural Tourism - An Overview*. Rural Development Division.
- IWL. (22. 8 2014). [www.iraqiwomensleague.com](http://www.iraqiwomensleague.com/mod.php?mod=news&modfile=item&itemid=27502#.WYw3l-mZHIU). Abgerufen am 10. 8 2017 von *Ottoman Iraq (1532 - 1918)*: <http://www.iraqiwomensleague.com/mod.php?mod=news&modfile=item&itemid=27502#.WYw3l-mZHIU>
- J.A.U. (2013). *Governora te Profile*. JAU.
- Jack, M. (10. 12 2006). Urban. Abgerufen am 20. 4 2018 von [www.urbandictionary.com: https://www.urbandictionary.com/define.php?term=urban](https://www.urbandictionary.com/define.php?term=urban)
- Jackson, J. A. (1969). *Migration: Volume 2, Sociological Studies*. Cambridge University Press.
- Jader, R. (2015). *threat of Mines on Kurdistan still remained*. Hawler.

- Johnson, R. B., & Onwuegbuzie, A. J. (2004). *Mixed Methods Research: A Research Paradigm Whose Time Has Come*. Educational Researcher, 17.
- Jovanovic, S., & Ilic, I. (2016). *Infrastructure as Important Determinant of Tourism Development in The Countries of Southeast Europe*. ECOFORUM.
- K.Anheie, Helmut, A.List, & Regina. (2005). *A DICTIONARY OF CIVIL SOCIETY, PHILANTHROPY AND THE NON-PROFIT SECTOR*. London: Taylor & Francis.
- K.Anheier, H., & A.List, R. (2006). *A Dictionary of civil society, philanthropy and the Non- profit sector*. London: Routledge.
- K.Anheier, Helmut, A.List, & Regina. (2005). *A DICTIONARY OF CIVIL SOCIETY, PHILANTHROPY AND THE NON-PROFIT SECTOR*. London: Taylor & Francis.
- K.R.S.O. (2015). Dohuk Population. Abgerufen am 1. 1 2016 von <http://krso.net/files/articles/230714010428.pdf>
- K.R.S.O. (2015). Dohuk Map. Abgerufen am 1. 1 2016 von <http://krso.net/Default.aspx?page=category&c=dhk>
- K.R.S.O. (2015). Sulaimanya Map. Abgerufen am 1. 1 2016 von <http://krso.net/Default.aspx?page=category&c=sule>
- K.R.S.O. (2015). Sulaimanya Population. Abgerufen am 1. 1 2016 von <http://krso.net:http://krso.net/files/articles/230714010315.pdf>
- K.S.U.edu. (2016). Al-Anfaal. Abgerufen am 11. 2 2016 von [www.ksu.edu.sa: http://quran.ksu.edu.sa/tafseer/katheer/sura8-aya1.html](http://quran.ksu.edu.sa/tafseer/katheer/sura8-aya1.html)
- K.S.U.edu. (3. 3 2016). Al-Anfaal. Abgerufen am 11. 2 2016 von [www.ksu.edu.sa: http://quran.ksu.edu.sa/tafseer/katheer/sura8-aya1.html](http://quran.ksu.edu.sa/tafseer/katheer/sura8-aya1.html)
- Kaba, A. J. (2005). The Spread of Christianity and Islam in Africa: A Survey and Analysis of the Numbers and Percentages of Christians, Muslims and Those Who Practice Indigenous Religions. Abgerufen am 18. 3 2018 von [www.questia.com: https://www.questia.com/library/journal/1G1-159027867/the-spread-of-christianity-and-islam-in-africa-a](http://www.questia.com: https://www.questia.com/library/journal/1G1-159027867/the-spread-of-christianity-and-islam-in-africa-a)
- Kafala, T. (25. 3 2003). The Iraqi Baath party. Abgerufen am 16. 8 2017 von [news.bbc.co.uk: http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/world/middle\\_east/2886733.stm](http://news.bbc.co.uk: http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/world/middle_east/2886733.stm)
- Kannappan, S. (1985). *Urban Employment and the Labour Market in Developing*. Economic Development and Cultural Change.
- Karl, M. (2002). Participatory Policy Reform from a Sustainable Livelihoods Perspective. *FAO*.
- Karl, M. (2002). *Participatory policy from a Sustainable Livelihoods Perspective*. *FAO*.
- Karttunen, K. (2009). Rural Income Generation and Diversification A Case Study in Eastern Zambia. *Helsinki: University of Helsinki*.
- Kaufman, A. S., & Kaufman, N. L. (2005). *Essentials of Research Design*. New Jersey: John Wiley & Sons, Inc.
- Kawagoe, T. (1999). *Agricultural Land Reform in Postwar Japan: Experiences and Issues*. Agricultural Land Reform in Postwar Japan: Experiences and Issues.
- Keeley, J. (2001). *Influencing Policy Processes for Sustainable Livelihoods*. Brighton: Institute of Development Studies.
- Keitel, J. (14. 4 2015). Germany's welfare system: an overview. Abgerufen am 10. 6 2018 von [www.policyinpractice.co.uk: http://policyinpractice.co.uk/the-welfare-system-in-germany/](http://policyinpractice.co.uk: http://policyinpractice.co.uk/the-welfare-system-in-germany/)
- Kemp, R., Parto, S., & Gibson, R. B. (2005). *Governance for sustainable development: moving from theory to practice*. Sustainable Development.
- Khanna, N., & Solanki, P. (3-5. 5 2014). *Role of agriculture in the global economy*. 2nd International Conference on Agricultural & Horticultural Sciences (S. 221). Hyderabad: Agrotechnol 2014. Von [www.omicsonline.org: https://www.omicsonline.org/proceedings/role-of-agriculture-in-the-global-economy-15678.html](http://www.omicsonline.org: https://www.omicsonline.org/proceedings/role-of-agriculture-in-the-global-economy-15678.html) abgerufen
- Khoshnaw, M. (15. 6 2007). Iraqi Kurdistan's biggest minefield in the Middle East. Abgerufen am 10. 2 2016 von [www.cabinet.gov.krd: http://cabinet.gov.krd/a/d.aspx?a=18450&l=14&r=81&s=010000](http://cabinet.gov.krd: http://cabinet.gov.krd/a/d.aspx?a=18450&l=14&r=81&s=010000)
- Kniggeô, L., & Cope, M. (2006). *Grounded Visualization: integrating the analysis of qualitative*. Environment and Planning, S. 2021-2037.
- Ko, W. W., & Lou, J. (1997). The Relationship between the Agricultural and Industrial Sectors in Chinese Economic Development. *Agricultural Economics Report No. 368*.
- Korn, D. A. (1990). *Human Rights in Iraq*. In Human Rights Watch Books (S. 8). New Haven and London: Yale University Press.



- Kothari, C. (2004). *Research Methodology*. New Delhi: New Age International Ltd.
- Kotler, P. (2017). Answers Your Questions on Marketing Questions. *Abgerufen am 1. 10 2015 von www.kotlermarketing.com: http://www.kotlermarketing.com/phil\_questions.shtml*
- Kotler, P., Armstrong, C., Saunders, J., & Wong, V. (1999). *Principles of Marketing*. London: Prentice Hall Inc.
- Kramer, A.-M. (2015). *Documentary and Archival: Archival Method*.
- Krejcie, R. V., & Morgan, A. W. (1970). *Determining sample size for research activities*. EDUCATIONAL AND PSYCHOLOGICAL MEASUREMENT, 607-610.
- Kröhnert, S. (2009). *Migration: the key to better life in cities and rural areas alike*.
- KRP. (2000). President of KR. *Abgerufen am 10. 2 2016 von www.presidency.krd: http://www.presidency.krd/arabic/pdisplay.aspx?sm=U6XYvIzVAMU=*
- KRSO. (8. 6 2016). *www.krso.net. Abgerufen am 8. 6 2016 von Population Estimates for the Kurdistan Region by Governorate and District 2009 – 2015: www.krso.net/files/articles/050116033733.pdf*
- Kumrc, O., & Franic, R. (2005). *Using Slovenian Experience in the Croatian Agricultural Policy Adjustment to EU Requirments*. *Agriculturae Conspectus Scientificus*, 29-36.
- L.G, N., & Chandrashekar, B. (2014). *Rural Tourism and Rural Development in India*. *International Journal of Interdisciplinary and Multidisciplinary Studies*, 42-48.
- LEADER. (1997). *Towards a new Community Initiative for rural developmen: The bottom-up approach*. LEADER Magazine.
- Lee, D. (24. 4 2015). *www.linkedin.com. Abgerufen am 15. 10 2016 von Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs and Marketing : https://www.linkedin.com/pulse/maslows-hierarchy-needs-marketing-dylan-lee*
- Lee, E. S. (1966). *A Theory of Migration*. *Demography*, 47-57.
- Lewis, G. (1982). *Human Migration: Geographical Perspectives*. New York: Martin's Press.
- Lincoln, & Guba. (1989). *Fourth Generation Evaluation*. London. London: SAGE Publications.
- Liu, A. (2006). *Tourism in Rural Areas: Kedah, Malaysia*. *Tourism Management*, 878-889.
- Liverpool-Tasie, L. S., Kuku, O., & Ajibola, A. (2012). *A Review of Literature on Agricultural Productivity, Social Capital and Food Security in Nigeria*. *International Food Policy Research Institute*.
- Llanto, G. M. (2012). *The Impact of Infrastructure on Agricultural Productivity*. *Southeast Asian Regional Center for Graduate Study and Research in Agriculture*.
- Loans, U. (2014). *What is Considered a Rural Area by the USDA? Abgerufen am 21. 4 2018 von www.usdamortgagesloans.com: http://www.usdamortgagesloans.com/usda-loan-eligibility/what-is-considered-a-rural-area-by-the-usda/*
- Luda, S. (2012). *AN INTEGRATED APPROACH TO RURAL DEVELOPMENT*. Budapest: University of Budapest.
- Luo, X., & Zhu, N. (2014). *The Impact of Migration on Rural Poverty and Inequality: A Case in China*. CORANO.
- Luo, Xubei; Zhu, Nong. (2008). *Rising Income Inequality in China*. *The World Bank*.
- Lynch, K. (2005). *In K. Lynch, Rural-Urban Interaction in the developing World*. Oxon: Routledge.
- lynch, K. (2005). *Rural-Urban interaction in the developing country*. New York: Routledge.
- M.E.R.I.P. (1974). *www.jstor.org. jstor. Abgerufen am 16. 8 2017 von Iraq and Kurdish Autonomy: https://www.jstor.org/stable/3011338?seq=1#page\_scan\_tab\_contents*
- M.Gunter, M. (2004). *Historical Dictionary of Kurds*. USA: Scarecrow Press, Inc.
- MacRitchie, J., Toia, S., & Polito, G. (2011). *Italians on the Northern Beaches 1920-70s*. *Abgerufen am 21. 4 2018 von www.migrationheritage.nsw.gov.au/sem: http://www.migrationheritage.nsw.gov.au/sem/reconte/italians-on-northern-beaches/index.html*
- Malhotra, C., Chariar, V. M., Das, L., & Ilavarasan, P. V. (2008). *ICT for Rural Development: An Inclusive Framework for e-Governance*. In *Adopting E-governance (S. 217)*. New-Delhi: Computer Society of India.
- Malik, K. (8. 11 2007). *Why immigration is a social problem*. *Abgerufen am 4. 8 2017 von www.kenanmalik.com: http://www.kenanmalik.com/lectures/immigration\_oxford.html*
- Map, G. (2017). *Abgerufen am 1. 2 2017 von https://www.google.de/maps/dir/Bahirka,+Irak/Mergasur,+Irak/@36.5446547,44.2495811,9.87z/data=!4m1!3!4m1!1m5!1m1!1s0x4006e22c27e900e5:0xbe8a0a7966e2da64!2m2!1d44.0350308!2d36.3158224!1m5!1m1!1s0x4005da447e639657:0xedd4868b619ad205!2m2!1d44.306209!2d36.838*

- Mares, P. (11. 8 2016). How temporary migration is changing Australia – and the world. *Abgerufen am 30. 3 2018 von [www.theconversation.com/how-australia-and-the-world-63035](http://www.theconversation.com/how-australia-and-the-world-63035)* <http://theconversation.com/how-temporary-migration-is-changing-australia-and-the-world-63035>
- Martin, P. (18. 3 2013). *www.independent.co.uk*. *Abgerufen am 10. 8 2016 von Paul Bremer on Iraq, ten years on: 'We made major strategic mistakes. But I still think Iraqis are far better off': <http://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/middle-east/paul-bremer-on-iraq-ten-years-on-we-made-major-strategic-mistakes-but-i-still-think-iraqis-are-far-8539767.html>*
- Marvasti, A. B. (2004). *Qualitative Research in Sociology*. London: SAGE Publications.
- Maslow, A. H. (1943). *A Theory of Human Motivation*. *Psychological Review*, 370-396.
- Massuanganhe, I. J. (2008). GOVERNANCE, NATURAL RESOURCES AND LOCAL DEVELOPMENT IN MOZAMBIQUE. *UNIVERSITY OF THE FREE STATE*.
- Matland, R. E. (1995). *Synthesizing the Implementation Literature: The Ambiguity-Conflict Model of Policy Implementation*. *Journal of Public Administration Research and Theory*, 145-174.
- Mayer, D., & Thompson, M. (1982). *A Case Study of Policy: Process, Development and Implementation*. *Journal of Leisurability*, 13-19.
- Mayer-Rühen, H., Bartels, M., Urban, G., Schmidt-Kallert, E., & others. (1999). *A Milestones on the Way to Structural Change and Transformation*. *Regional Rural Development*.
- Mbaiwa, J. E. (2008). TOURISM DEVELOPMENT, RURAL LIVELIHOODS, AND CONSERVATION IN THE OKAVANGO DELTA, BOTSWANA. *Texas: Texas A&M University*.
- Mberu, B. U. (2006). *Internal migration and household living conditions in Ethiopia*. *DEMOGRAPHIC RESEARCH*.
- McDowall, & D. (2007). *In A MODERN HISTORY (S. 358-361)*. *New York: I.B Tauris & Co Ltd*.
- McDOWALL, D. (2007). *A Modern History of the Kurds*. *London: I.B.Tauris & Co Ltd*.
- McLeod, S. (2017). Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs. *Abgerufen am 1. 12 2017 von [www.simplypsychology.org/https://www.simplypsychology.org/maslow.html](http://www.simplypsychology.org/https://www.simplypsychology.org/maslow.html)*
- Melik, J. (6. 12 2010). *www.bbc.com*. *Abgerufen am 3. 9 2017 von Rural areas face challenges to eradicate extreme poverty: <http://www.bbc.com/news/business-11909255>*
- Metz, M., & GTZ. (2005). *Monitoring Policy Impacts*. *Rome: FAO*.
- Meyer, B. D., & Sullivan, J. X. (2003). *Measuring the Well-Being of the Poor Using Income and Consumption*.
- Miller, J. (16. 6 1991). *www.nytimes.com*. *Abgerufen am 19. 8 2017 von The World; Displaced in the Gulf War: 5 Million Refugees: <http://www.nytimes.com/1991/06/16/weekinreview/the-world-displaced-in-the-gulf-war-5-million-refugees.html?mcubz=1>*
- Mitra, A., & Murayama, M. (2008). *Rural to Urban Migration*. *Jetro: Institute of Developing Economies*.
- Moffatt, M. (25. 6 2017). *What Is a Market? Abgerufen am 22. 9 2017 von [www.thoughtco.com/https://www.thoughtco.com/definition-of-a-market-1146125](http://www.thoughtco.com/https://www.thoughtco.com/definition-of-a-market-1146125)*
- Mohammed, A. S. (2005). *Analysis of the Rural Poverty*. *Salahaddin University*.
- MoMAA, M. o. (2008). *Disclose of Kurdish Genocide data*. *Erbil: West*.
- MoP. (2011). *Strategic Development Plan for the Kurdistan Region*. *Erbil: Ministry of Planning KRG*
- Muhammad, K. I. (2000). *The geographical analysis of the distribution of rural settlements mountain*. *Zanko*, 239-252.
- Muhammed, K. I. (2011). *Continuous of the Arabization is a threat on Kurdish in Dyala*. *Gulan Media*. *Abgerufen am 10. 2 2016*
- Muhammed, K., Omar, M., Kakayi, S., & Haji, M. (2003). *Arabization policy in Kurdistan Region of Iraq: Documentarian studies*. *Erbil: Aras Publisher*.
- Muir, J. (Wednesday, 14 November 2007). *BBC NEWS*. *Abgerufen am 12. 4 2012 von [http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/middle\\_east/7093759.stm](http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/middle_east/7093759.stm)*
- Mullen, K., Orden, D., & Gulati, A. (2005). *Agricultural Policies 1985-2002*. *IFPRI*.
- Munshi, K., & Rosenzweig, M. (26. 3 2016). *www.indianexpress.com*. *Abgerufen am 14. 7 2016 von Rural to urban migration in India: <http://indianexpress.com/article/india/india-news-india/rural-to-urban-migration-in-india-why-labour-mobility-bucks-global-trend/>*
- Mushi, N. S. (2003). *REGIONAL DEVELOPMENT THROUGH RURAL-URBAN LINKAGES: The Dar-es Salaam Impact Region*. *Dortmund: University of Dortmund*.

- Mzuri, R. (2013). The tragedies of Barzani. *Erbil: Haji Hashim*.
- Nabi, M. (2010). General information about Mergasur. *Erbil*.
- Naoum, S. G. (2007). Dissertation Research and Writing for Construction Student. *Amsterdam: Butterworth-Heinemann is an imprint of Elsevier*.
- Narayanan, S. (12. 1 2015). Food Security in India: The Imperative and Its Challenges. *Abgerufen am 24. 9 2017 von www.onlinelibrary.wiley.com: http://onlinelibrary.wiley.com/doi/10.1002/app5.62/full*
- Nations, U. (10. 7 2009). What is Good Governance. *Abgerufen am 3. 8 2017 von www.unescap.org: http://www.unescap.org/resources/what-good-governance*
- NCCI. (2015). Dohuk Governorate Profile. *NCCI*.
- Neale, P., Thapa, S., & Boyce, C. (2006). PREPARING A CASE STUDY. *Pathfinder International*.
- Nesterova, A. A., Suslova, T. F., Tsyiganov, M. E., & Kobzeva, N. V. (2015). *Migration as a Social Problem*. Asian Social Science.
- NG, C. (19. 3 2018). [www.wikipedia.org](http://www.wikipedia.org). *Abgerufen am 24. 4 2018 von Income: https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/Income*
- Nicholas, R. (2015). Archival and Historical Researchs. *www.youtube.com*.
- Nikkhah, H. A., & Redzuan, M. B. (2010). *The Role of NGOs in Promoting Empowerment for Sustainable Community Development*. Department of Social and Development Sciences, Faculty of Human Ecology, 85-92.
- Nordbo, I. (2009). Living with tourism The case of small-scale rural tourism businesses in Norway and Chile. *Aalborg: Aalborg University*.
- Nugent, P. M. (7. 4 2013). [www.psychologydictionary.org](http://www.psychologydictionary.org). *Abgerufen am 3. 6 2016 von What is ARCHIVAL RESEARCH?: http://psychologydictionary.org/archival-research/*
- Ö.B, B., & H., d. B. (2013). *The Determinants of International Migration Theory*. New York: Springer Science+Business Media.
- O.E.C.D. (2005). *New Approaches to Rural Policy*. Paris: OECD.
- O.E.C.D. (2009). OECD Rural Policy Reviews: China. *OECD*. *Abgerufen am 21. 5 2018 von www.oecd.org: http://www.oecd.org/gov/oecd-rural-policy-review-china.htm*
- O.E.C.D. (2015). *Analysing Policies Improve Agricultural Productivity Growth Sustainably*. *OECD food and agricultural review: Innovation, agricultural productivity and sustainability*.
- OECD. (2013). *Policy Framework for Investment in Agriculture*. OECD.
- Ogurtsov, E. S., Rylov, A. A., Durdyeva, D. A., & Lebedev, N. A. (2016). *The Role of Business Incubators in Supporting Economic Growth and Advancement of Small Business of the Russian Federation*. *Indian Journal of Science and Technology*.
- Okech, R., Haghiri, M., & George, B. P. (2012). RURAL TOURISM AS A SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT ALTERNATIVE. *Culture*.
- Olejarova, E. (2007). *Labor Migration as a Socio-Economic Phenomenon*. Budapest: Central European University.
- Olijarova, E. (2007). *Labor Migration as a Socio-Economic Phenomenon*. Budapest: Central European University.
- OPHI. (2014). *Poverty in Rural and Urban Areas*. University of Oxford.
- Oran, D., & J.D. (2000). *ORAN'S Doctionary of the Law 3rd*. West Legal Studies.
- Organization, F. a. (2. 9 2017). Rural Africa in motion: Dynamics and drivers of migration south of the Sahara. *Abgerufen am 21. 4 2018 von https://reliefweb.int/report/world/rural-africa-motion-dynamics-and-drivers-migration-south-sahara*
- Orientation, E. P. (2 2000). [www.europa.eu](http://ec.europa.eu). EUROPEAN POLICY. *Abgerufen am 10. 9 2017 von Why Do Agriculture and Rural Development Matter?: http://ec.europa.eu/development/body/theme/rurpol/outputs/policy/html/1.htm*
- Othman, T. A. (7. 8 2012). <https://genocide1988.wordpress.com/>. *Abgerufen am 1. 4 2016 von Category Mass Grave Gallery: https://genocide1988.wordpress.com/category/gallery/mass-grave-gallery/*
- Owusu, G. (2005). THE ROLE OF DISTRICT CAPITALS IN REGIONAL DEVELOPMENT: LINKING SMALL TOWNS, RURAL-URBAN LINKAGES AND DECENTRALISATION IN GHANA. *Trondheim: Norwegian University of Science and Technology, NTNU*.
- Palloni, A., Massey, D. S., Ceballos, M., Espinosa, K., & Spittel, M. (2001). *Social Capital and International Migration: A Test Using Information on Family Networks*. *American Journal of Sociology*, 1262-1298.

- Paluck, E. L., Green, S. A., & Green, D. P. (2018). *The contact hypothesis re-evaluated*. *Behavioural Public Policy*, 1-30.
- Pearce, J., & Eade, D. (2004). *Development, NGOs, and Civil Society*. *Oxfam*.
- Perry, M. J. (2003). *State-to-State Migration Flows:1995 to 2000*. *United States Census 2000 Special Reports*.
- Phiri, C. (2009). *LIVESTOCK, RURAL LIVELIHOODS AND RURAL DEVELOPMENT INTERVENTIONS IN THE EASTERN CAPE*. *UNIVERSITY OF FORT HARE*.
- Phuhlisani. (2009). *Approaches to policy development: A rapid scan of the literature*. *Phuhlisani*.
- Pipeline, P. (21. 2 2013). *Top-down and Bottom-up Approaches within Implementation*. *Abgerufen am 21. 8 2016 von www.wordpress.com: https://politicalpipeline.wordpress.com/2013/02/21/top-down-and-bottom-up-approaches-within-implementation/*
- Pitzer, J. (2005). *The General Government and Public Sectors*. *Washington, : TFHPSA*.
- PlanAfric. (2000). *Rural Planning in Zimbabwe*. *Environmental Planning Issues*.
- Plattner, K., Perez, A., & Thornsbury, S. (2012). *Seasonal Farm Price Patterns in Selected U.S. Fresh Fruit Markets*. *Washington: USDA, Economic Research Service*.
- Pleck, J. (2017). *Understanding Patriarchy and Men's Power*. *Abgerufen am 17. 2 2017 von www.nomas.org: http://nomas.org/understanding-patriarchy-and-mens-power/*
- Plewa, J. (12. 12 2017). *Farming: An EU success story*. *Abgerufen am 17. 6 2018 von www.theparliamentmagazine.eu: https://www.theparliamentmagazine.eu/articles/opinion/farming-eu-success-story*
- Polk, W. R. (2003). *The Kurds in the Iraq War*.
- Porter, F. (18. 6 2016). *7 Advantages Of Rural Development Programmes In Odisha*. *Abgerufen am 19. 5 2018 von www.abilogic.com: https://articles.abilogic.com/131372/advantages-rural-development-programmes-odisha.html*
- Portes, A. (1998). *Social Capital: Its Origins and Applications in Modern Sociology*. *Annual Review of Sociology*, 1-24.
- Pressman, J., & Wildavsky, A. (1973). *Implementation*. *California : University of California Press*.
- Prevezanos, K. (30. 10 2011). *www.dw.com*. *Abgerufen am 10. 3 2017 von Turkish guest workers transformed German society: https://www.dw.com/en/turkish-guest-workers-transformed-german-society/a-15489210*
- Primavera, C. (2005). *RURAL - RURAL MIGRATION IN GHANA*. *Amsterdam: University of Amsterdam*.
- Province, E. (2008). *Strategic Plan for Development and Improvement 2008-2012*. *Erbil: Erbil Governorate*.
- Qadir, B. (3. 9 2015). *imported products are damping the local products*. *Abgerufen am 3. 9 2015 von www.rudaw.net*.
- Qadir, B. (21. 2 2015). *Rudaw.Net*. *Abgerufen am 22. 2 2015 von So far the KR Villages are Going to be Evacuated: www.rudaw.net*
- Qadir, B. (21. 2 2015). *So far the KR Villages are Going to be Evacuated*. *Abgerufen am 22. 2 2015 von www.rudaw.net: www.rudaw.net*
- Qurbany, A. (2013). *Taimur. Karo*.
- R.Frank, C., Jr., & Webb, R. C. (1977). *Income Distribution and Growth in the Less-Developed Countries*. *Washington, DC: The Brookings Institution*.
- Rabinowitz, P. (2017). *http://ctb.ku.edu*. *Abgerufen am 18. 8 2016 von Section 8. Identifying and Analyzing Stakeholders and Their Interests: http://ctb.ku.edu/en/table-of-contents/participation/encouraging-involvement/identify-stakeholders/main*
- Ramachandran, P. (2013). *Food & nutrition security: Challenges in the new millennium*. *ndian J Med Res*, 373–382. *Abgerufen am 24. 9 2017 von https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC3818606/*
- Raniaiy, H. (2016). *Erbil Governorate*. *Erbil Governorate*.
- Rasul, H. Q. (1994). *Study on spring uprising 1991 in southern Kurdistan (Kurdish version)*. *Holand: Kurdology Center*.
- Ravenstein, E. G. (1885). *The Laws of Migration*. *Journal of the Statistical Society of London*, 167-235.
- Ravindra, R. (15. 3 2018). *Indo-Aryan migration*. *Abgerufen am 17. 3 2018 von www.wikipedia.org: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Indo-Aryan\_migration*
- Razzaqa, A. R., Mohamadb, N. H., & A.Kaderc, S. S. (2013). *Developing Human Capital for Rural Community Tourism: Using Experiential Learning Approach*. *Procedia - Social and Behavioral Sciences*, 1835 – 1839.

- Research, L. (2018). *www.statistics.laerd.com. Abgerufen am 12. 26 2019 von One-way ANOVA in SPSS Statistics: https://statistics.laerd.com/spss-tutorials/one-way-anova-using-spss-statistics.php*
- Resool, S. M., & Zahawi, H. (1990). *Forever Kurdish. Harith Zahawi and Latif Rashid.*
- Reuters. (30. 7 2014). *China says to ensure 'orderly' rural-urban migration. Abgerufen am 3. 3 2015 von http://uk.reuters.com: http://uk.reuters.com/article/uk-china-economy-urbanisation-idUKKBN0FZOGI20140730*
- Rogers, C. (1955). *Persons or science? A philosophical question. American Psychologist, 267–278.*
- Rogers, J., & Schmitz, M. (2011). *Agriculture and raw materials.*
- Roseman, C. (1971). *Migration as a spatial and temporal process. Annals of the Association of American Geographers, 589-598.*
- Rothman, R., Bates, R., & Eckhardt, K. (1977). *The undulating community: a typology of recurrent. Rural Sociology, 93-100.*
- Rowley, J. (2002). *Using Case Studies in Research. Management Research News, 17.*
- Rudaw, M. (2015). *The farmers are left their farms they have been employed in the governmental institutions. Erbil: Rudaw.*
- Saleh, A. O. (18. 7 2006). *Silence of The United Nations Toward Anfal Operations & the relatives of Missing Kurds in Anfal. Abgerufen am 23. 12 2013 von http://www.klawrojna.com: http://www.klawrojna.com/index.php?option=com\_content&view=article&id=1864&catid=35&Itemid=224*
- Sallayi, S. (21. 5 2015). *After the Algerian conspiracy , before the start of Gulan revolution. Abgerufen am 10. 2 2016 von www.ara.shafaaq.com: http://www.ara.shafaaq.com/2886*
- Saunders, J., Kotler, P., Armstrong, C., & Wong, V. (1999). *Principles of Marketing. London: Prentice Hall Inc.*
- Schmidt-Kallert, E. (2005). *A SHORT INTRODUCTION TO MICRO-REGIONAL PLANNING. Budapest: FAO.*
- Schmidt-Kallert, E. (2009). *DIE ERDE. A New Paradigm of Urban Transition:Tracing the Livelihood Strategies of Multi-Locational Households, 319.*
- Schrover, M. (5. 5 2008). *Industrial Revolution. Abgerufen am 20. 3 2018 von www.let.leidenuniv.nl: http://www.let.leidenuniv.nl/history/migration/chapter3.html#1*
- Scoones BIGORA, I. (2009). *Livelihoods perspectives and rural development. Journal of Peasant Studies.*
- Scoones, I. (2009). *Livelihoods Perspectives and Rural Development. Journal of Peasant Studies.*
- Section, P. I. (20. 3 2003). *www.unhcr.org. Abgerufen am 19. 8 2017 von Chronology: 1991 Gulf War crisis: http://www.unhcr.org/subsites/iraqcrisis/3e798c2d4/chronology-1991-gulf-war-crisis.html*
- Sen, S. (2001). *Involving Stakeholders in Aquaculture Policy-making, Planning and Management. Abgerufen am 20. 4 2015 von http://www.fao.org: http://www.fao.org/docrep/003/ab412e/ab412e32.htm*
- Sennhauser, E. (29. 7 2016). *What India's successful rural development programs can teach the world? Abgerufen am 21. 5 2018 von www.worldbank.org: http://blogs.worldbank.org/endorpovertyinsouthasia/what-india-s-successful-rural-development-programs-can-teach-world*
- Shah, A. (2006). *Local Governence in Developing Countries. Washington, D.C.: The world Bank .*
- Shashkevich-Stanford, A. (19. 9 2017). *Why some 19th century immigrants went back to Europe. Abgerufen am 17. 3 2018 von www.futurity.org: https://www.futurity.org/history-immigrants-norway-1547582-2/*
- Shucksmith, M. (2000). *Neo - endogenous rural development in an uncertain world. Newcastle: University of Newcastle.*
- Sinha, B. (2005). *Human Migration: Concepts and Approaches. Földrajzi Ertesito, 403-414.*
- Skeldon, R. (2017). *International Migration, Internal Migration, Mobility and Urbanization. New York: Population Division,UN.*
- Songco, J. A. (2002). *Do Rural Infrastructure Investments Benefit the Poor? Columbia University and the World Bank.*
- Soylemez, E. (2013). *An Analysis of Kurdistan Regional Government's Economic Policy Between 2003 - 2013. Development Studies and Politics, SOAS.*
- Spark, W. (2019). *Average Weather in Mêrgasur. Abgerufen am 13. 1 2019 von https://weatherspark.com: https://weatherspark.com/y/103244/Average-Weather-in-Mêrgasur-Iraq-Year-Round*
- Spirkin, A. (1983). *Dialectical Materialism. Abgerufen am 25. 5 2016 von Man and Society: https://www.marxists.org/reference/archive/spirkin/works/dialectical-materialism/ch05-s04.html*

- SPRG. (2017). [www.sprg.ac.uk](http://www.sprg.ac.uk/overview/the-macro-the-meso-and-the-micro). *Abgerufen am 18. 7 2016 von The emphasis on habits and practices will be incorporated into a framework of multi-level analysis.:* <http://www.sprg.ac.uk/overview/the-macro-the-meso-and-the-micro>
- Standing, G. (1984). Population mobility and productive relations, demographic Links and policy evaluation. *world bank sta work paper. No.695.*
- Stansfield, G. R. (2001). *Iraqi Kurdistan : an analysis and assessment of the development and operation of the political system. Durham University.*
- State, c. (2017). *Guest Essays Civil Society & the Private Sector. Oxfam.*
- Statistic KRG, E. (2010). *Erbil Statics. Erbil.*
- Steven R. Terrell. (2012). *Mixed-Methods Research Methodologies. The Qualitative Report, 259.*
- Stutzer, A. (2003). *The Role of Income Aspirations in Individual's Happiness.*
- Sulaiman, A. A. (2013). *In A. i.-I. study. Erbil.*
- Surbhi, S. a. (29. 3 2016). *Difference Between Urban and Rural. Abgerufen am 20. 4 2018 von www.keydifferences.com: https://keydifferences.com/difference-between-urban-and-rural.html*
- Surbhi, S. b. (31. 8 2015). *www.keydifferences.com. Abgerufen am 27. 8 2017 von Difference Between Internal and External Stakeholders: http://keydifferences.com/difference-between-internal-and-external-stakeholders.html*
- Survivor, T. W. (1. 8 2016). *4 Market Structures In Economics. Abgerufen am 24. 9 2017 von www.wallstreetsurvivor.com: http://blog.wallstreetsurvivor.com/2016/08/01/4-market-structures-in-economics/*
- Tamanja, E. M. (2014). *Child migration and educational progression in the Savannah regions of Ghana. Dortmund: Ph.D. dissertation TU-Dortmund.(published online)*
- Tango. (2009). *Sustainability of rural development projects. Asia: International Fund for Agricultural Development IFAD.*
- Tashan, S. (2014). *The dead bodies of 93 anfaled Barzani returned to Kurdistan . Erbil: Hawler Journal.*
- Taylor, M. (2012). *Direct Marketing Strategies and Opportunities. NCKS Commercial Enterprises Conference.*
- TeddlieC., C., & Tashakkori, A. (2003). *Major issues and controversies in the use of mixed methods in the. In Handbook of Mixed. CA: Sage Publications.*
- Temu, A. E., & Temu, A. A. (2005). *High Value Agricultural Products for Smallholder Markets in Sub-Saharan Africa: Trends, Opportunities and Research Priorities . International Center for Tropica.*
- Today, E. (2017). *The more similar to the original place, the migration has advantages and disadvantages in the destination place. It redistributes human capital and provides the market with cheaper and more skilled labor and makes culture more diverse. Abgerufen am 20. 3 2018 von www.eschooltoday.com: http://eschooltoday.com/migration/impact-of-migration-on-destination-country.html*
- Torero, M. (2011). *A framework for Linking Small Farmers to Markets. Roma: IFAD.*
- Trerup, S. L. (2010). *Ensuring Sustainable Developm within a Changing Climate. COPENHAGEN: UNIVERSITY OF COPENHAGEN.*
- Tran, M. (16. 10 2012). *Forced migration in the 21st century: urbanised and unending. Abgerufen am 31. 3 2018 von www.theguardian.com: https://www.theguardian.com/global-development/2012/oct/16/forced-migration-21st-century-urbanised-unending*
- U.N. (2008). *Spatial Planning. New York: UN.*
- UCA. (2017). *www.uca.edu. Abgerufen am 16. 8 2017 von Iraq/Kurds (1932-present): http://uca.edu/politicalscience/dadm-project/middle-eastnorth-africapersian-gulf-region/iraqkurds-1932-present/*
- UN. (29. 6 1991). *Xenophon & the Kurds in 400BC. Abgerufen am 22. 4 2018 von www.apc.org: http://archive.apc.org/mideast.kurds/msg00102.html*
- UNCEF. (2011). *Overview of Internal Migration in India. UNCEF.*
- UNEP, & IWMI. (2011). *In UNEP, & IWMI, Ecosystems for water and food security.*
- UNESCO. (2007). *Poverty. Abgerufen am 21. 4 2018 von www.unesco.org: http://www.unesco.org/new/en/social-and-human-sciences/themes/international-migration/glossary/poverty/*
- UNHCR. (2007). *Governorate Asseement report Sulaymaniyah Governorate . UNHCR.*
- Unit, J. A. (2013). *Governora te Profile Erbil. JAU.*
- UNJHIC. (2001). *Northern Iraq . Erbil: UNOPS.*

- Uraiwan, S. (1984). *From Policy Analysis to Policy and Policy Implementation*. Paris: UNESCO.
- Van Meter, D. S., & Van Horn, C. E. (1975). *The Policy Implementation Process: A Conceptual Framework*. Administration and Society, 445-488.
- Vaquerizo, F. L. (2013). *Rural Tourism Development in Nepal*. Tampere University.
- Vargas-Lundius, R. (2004). *Remittances and Rural Development*. Rome: IFAD.
- Vries, F. P., H.Sally, & Inocencio, A. (2005). *Opportunities for Private sector participation in Agriculture water development and management*. Working Paper 100 (S. 50). Colombo: International Water Management Institute.
- Vutthisomboon, A. (1998). *Internal Migration in Northeast Thailand*. Massey University.
- Wainer, A. (2011). *Development and Migration In Rural Mexico*. Bread for the World.
- Wayman, R. (7. 4 2016). www.bbc.com. *Abgerufen am 19. 8 2017 von Remembering the Kurdish uprising of 1991: <http://www.bbc.com/news/in-pictures-35967389>*
- WCED. (1987). *Our common future*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Wheaton, H., Carey, L., & Blanchard. (1836). *Elements of international law: with a sketch of the history of the science*.
- Wheeler, S. M. (2013). *Climate change*. In *Planning for Sustainability 2nd (S. 4)*. New York: Taylor & Francis Group.
- White, L. D. (1926). *Introduction to the study of public administration*. New York: Macmillan.
- Wikipedia. (21. 4 2017). *Seasonal human migration*. *Abgerufen am 30. 7 2017 von [en.wikipedia.org: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seasonal\\_human\\_migration](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seasonal_human_migration)*
- Wolfe, R. (1966). *Recreational travel: the new*. Canadian Geographer, 1-14.
- Wondimagegnhu, B. A. (2012). *Economic Impact of Rural-Urban Migration on Income and Poverty of Migrant Sending Rural Households With Evidences from Southern Ethiopia*. Bochum: Ruhr University of Bochum.
- Woodford, K. (2007). *CAMBRIDGE Learner's Dictionary 3rd edition*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University press.
- Wyatt-Nichol, H., & Brown, S. (2013). *Social Class and Socioeconomic Status*. Journal of Public Affairs Education, 187–208.
- YA, M. (2016). *Cause and Consequence of Cross Border Illegal Migration from South Wollo, Ethiopia*. Arts and Social Sciences Journal.
- Yaqub, S., & Haan, A. d. (2008). *Migration and Poverty Linkages Knowledge and Policy Implications*. Social Policy and Migration in Developing Countries, 22-23.
- Yin, R. K. (2009). *Case Study Research V.5*. California: SAGE Inc.
- Young, D. R. (2000). *Alternative Models of Government Nonprofit Sector Relations Theoretical and International Perspectives*. SAGE journals, 149-172.
- Zebary, A. -H. (9. 8 2013). www.iraqhurr.org. *Abgerufen am 5. 9 2016 von Agriculture of Kurdistan: a plan to achieve self-sufficiency: <http://www.iraqhurr.org/a/25071043.html>*
- Zhou, P. (3. 4 2017). *Migration*. *Abgerufen am 30. 7 2017 von [www.thoughtco.com: https://www.thoughtco.com/voluntary-migration-definition-1435455](https://www.thoughtco.com/voluntary-migration-definition-1435455)*
- Zorzoliu, R., & Iatagan, M. (2006). *Rural tourism as an important source of economy for some rural places*. Journal of Tourism, 99-103.